

**LIBERATING LEARNING AND EMPOWERING EDUCATION:
INCORPORATING DRAMA AS A SUBJECT
IN SINGAPORE SCHOOLS**

Su-Lin Ngiam

**Bachelor of Arts (Honours)
National University of Singapore**

Theatre Studies

Creative Industries Research & Applications Centre

Queensland University of Technology

Submitted for the award of Masters of Arts (Research), March 2002

Volume 1

KEYWORDS

The following is a list of keywords that appear within the thesis or are associated with the thesis topic. These keywords have been listed for cataloguing purposes. Keywords that apply to this study are: aesthetic, education, drama in education, drama, critical pedagogy, constructivism, Socratic education, holistic education, creativity, multiple intelligences, personal development, Queensland, and Singapore.

ABSTRACT

This study can be divided into two main but related sections. The first involves examining the role of an aesthetic education in schools, and the second, how to make it a reality in Singapore schools. There is currently little tangible support for aesthetic learning in Singapore schools, and research in this area is lacking. However, the findings of this study propose that an aesthetic education should be provided for all students in Singapore schools. The study investigates the role an education in all the arts can play. Furthermore, the philosophies of aesthetic learning resonate with current learning theories and directions in education, such as developing students' multiple intelligences, creativity, and life-skills development. They also relate to constructivist and critical pedagogies; paradigms which infuse the study. The implementation of aesthetic learning in schools involves looking at the different dimensions to schooling: the Intentional, Structural, Curricular, Pedagogical and Evaluative. These investigations occurred in both Singapore and Brisbane (Queensland, Australia) settings where significant practice was observed in the latter. The fieldwork research together with the literature reviewed was used to inform recommendations for drama in education in Singapore.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

1	Introduction	1
2	Literature Review	3
	New Singapore	4
	Education in Singapore	7
	Arts Education in Singapore	9
	Some Challenges Faced	11
	• Critical Thinking and Creativity	11
	• An Aesthetic Education	13
	Envisioning A Better Way: A Socratic Education	15
	• A Critical and Constructivist Pedagogy	16
	• Aesthetic Learning	17
	• Extending Aesthetic Learning	22
	- Multiple Intelligences	22
	- Creativity	24
	- Personal Development	30
	Implications of A Socratic Education for Singapore	33
3	Methodology	36
	Qualitative Research	36
	Purpose of the Field Work	38
	The Research Settings and Participants	41
	• Australia	41

• Singapore	47
Role as Researcher	55
Methods of Data Collection	59
• Field Log	60
• Interviews	61
• School and Program Documents	62
Data Analysis	62
Establishing Credibility	65
Reporting on Data	67
4 Looking for Significant Practice in Queensland	69
The Intentional Dimension	69
• Aims of Drama in Education	70
The Structural Dimension	71
• Support from the Principal	72
• Support from Staff and Administration	74
• Space	75
• Time	76
• Support from Parents	78
• Trained Drama Teachers	79
• Support from the Professional Community	80
The Curricular Dimension	82
• An Aesthetic Education	83
• Collaborative Planning	84

• Artists-in-Residence	85
• Technology	86
• Co-Curricular Activities	88
The Pedagogical Dimension	90
• A Passion for The Arts	91
• A Nurturing and Empowering Pedagogy	92
• Working as a Team	93
• Networking	94
• Professional Development	96
The Evaluative Dimension	97
• Purposes of Student Assessment	98
• Student Assessment	99
• Drama Program Evaluation	100
• Teacher Evaluation	101
Conclusion	103
5 Drama in Education Practice in Singapore	105
The Intentional Dimension	105
• Mayflower Primary School	106
• Orchid Secondary School	107
• Merlion Secondary School	108
The Structural Dimension	110
The Curricular Dimension	112
The Pedagogical Dimension	114

	The Evaluative Dimension	116
	Conclusion	118
6	The Way Forward: Recommendations for Drama in Education in Singapore	120
	Harnessing A Critical and Constructivist Pedagogy	121
	Providing an Aesthetic Education	125
	The Aesthetic Curriculum	127
	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • The Arts as a Generic Community of Subjects • A Strong Foundation in The Arts • The Conservationist and Grounded Aesthetic • A Student-Centered Curriculum • Integrating Technology into the Curriculum • Working with Artists-in-Residence • Providing Co-Curricular Activities 	127 127 128 130 131 132 134
	Resources Necessary for an Aesthetic Education	137
	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • A Passion for The Arts • Teacher Training • Opportunities to Network and Professionally Develop 	138 140 141
	Assessment in an Aesthetic Education	143
	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Using the Aesthetic Field • Using an Outcomes-Based Approach • Fair Assessment Practices 	143 145 146
	Conclusion	147
	List of References	149

The work contained in this thesis has not been previously submitted for a degree or diploma at any other higher education institution. To the best of my knowledge and belief, the thesis contains no material previously published or written by another person except where due reference is made.

Date: 24 March 2021.

My heartfelt thanks to the following people for their encouragement and assistance in completing this study:

Ms Judith McLean
Queensland University of Technology

Supervision

Ms Christine Comans
Queensland University of Technology

Co-supervision

Mr. & Mrs. Ngiam
Ms Audrey Hoo
The Necessary Stage

Patience and support

and

To all the research participants.

INTRODUCTION

This study, *Librating Learning and Empowering Education: Incorporating Drama As A Subject In Singapore Schools* was conducted in response to the lack of drama learning in schools in Singapore. Its aim is to convince policy makers, educators, parents and students of the important role drama, and the arts play in learning, and the education of the body, heart and mind. The recent shifts in education policy in Singapore and other countries, and the renewed interest in learning and the role of education in societies has also lent fuel for this study, making it timely. Moreover, these philosophical shifts in education favor the arts and it is therefore urgent that the latter is heard and considered seriously by those who can make a difference.

Interest in studying the area of drama in education in Singapore arose from being involved in education work with a theatre company. The belief that arts in education has the power to ‘liberate’ learning such that it becomes a joy and passion, and ‘empowers’ education to become interesting, meaningful and transformative was witnessed first-hand, and consequently deepened through the process of this study. Simultaneously, the difficulties in conducting drama in education programs in schools that received little philosophical and tangible support from the majority of the school community was a constant reality. As well, there was a lack of significant arts education models in Singapore to learn, or adapt from. Dialogue on the topic at both national, and industry levels was also scarce.

As a result, the research for this study involved examining and formulating arguments for arts education in schools, specifically, to incorporate the arts as subjects within the curriculum. It was also interested in looking at what factors needed to be present to facilitate the provision of arts education in schools; in this case, drama as a subject. The fieldwork for the study concentrated on the latter and involved re-examining experiences in Singapore, as well as studying significant practices in Brisbane, Queensland, Australia.

This thesis will continue with a Literature Review, followed by reporting on the methodology adopted for the study. Findings from the fieldwork are presented in chapters five and six; with a chapter each devoted to Australia and Singapore. Finally, the thesis will end with recommendations for the positive growth of drama in education in Singapore.

LITERATURE REVIEW

This chapter focuses on the literature reviewed for defining the hypothesis of this study. It has its premise in the existing political, economic, social, and cultural driving forces in Singapore and their impact on education. The literature review aims to demonstrate that recent directions in education in Singapore while relevant to the needs of the country, are nevertheless, inadequate; therefore questioning the success of present ideologies and policies in achieving stated aims.

This study identifies an integral component of education that is absent in the learning experiences of young Singaporeans. It proposes that schools which fail to provide a Socratic education for their students are depriving them of a crucial, and imperative strategy of meaning making and expression. A Socratic education consists of three components: a critical pedagogy; a constructivist orientation towards learning; and an aesthetic education. Furthermore, learning aesthetically contributes towards the development of multiple intelligences, creativity, and students' personal development in the form of social and cognitive competencies. Each of these extensions to aesthetic learning is further discussed separately.

Finally, this chapter exemplifies the role of a Socratic education in Singapore, and its possible contribution towards achieving national goals.

New Singapore

Singapore is a small country of 659.9 square meters, with a large population of about four million people. Despite its size geographically, the country has big ambitions, with people as its only natural resource.

In Singapore's case, the common purpose is the Darwinian struggle for national economic competitiveness. Institutions and policies are judged on their contribution to the chosen national enterprise.

(George, 2000: 18)

Singapore's ambitions are economic-based, and economic success forms the ethos of most Singaporeans¹. This unifying drive is mostly initiated, harnessed and encouraged by the government who often heightens the equation between economic success and survival. This was again demonstrated in the Prime Minister's 2001 National Day address to the nation where he called for '**A New Singapore**' which requires 'a new economic strategy' (Goh, 2001, http://sg.cna.mediacorpnews.com/ndp2001/rally_en5.htm). This strategy involves staying competitive in the global market 'built on advances in science and technology', and driven by a knowledge-based economy 'where human capital is the key source of growth' (ibid). Information and ideas will be the main currency in the new economy. Additionally, Singapore aims to be a **globapolis** where people from 'all over the world' can be found working and living in the country, and who are in turn 'well connected to all parts of the globe' (ibid). This would be through communications, market access and investments, and in areas such

¹ As a young nation that only gained independence in 1965, it has already reached developed nation status. The World Economic Forum's Global Competitiveness Ranking had Singapore recently ranked as the world's most competitive economy (Ministry of Information and the Arts, 2001: 10).

as education, sports and the arts. The government aims for New Singapore to be ‘one of the world’s finest, most livable cities’ (ibid).

Simultaneously, the government realizes that economic success alone while imperative, is insufficient to sustain Singaporeans. It realizes that creating a citizen requires providing for the multi-facetedness of human needs, and allowing Singaporeans to feel ownership over their experiences. The need to instill a personal commitment to Singapore has become more salient in the 21st century now that borders between countries are more fluid, and human talent is not constrained by geography but obeys market forces. Consequently, this has led to the government creating a ‘social compact’ with its citizens, termed ‘**Singapore 21**’².

Singapore 21 is a total vision. It reaches beyond economic and material achievements to hearts and people. It examines values, attitudes, roles and relationships in society. These values bind us together and distinguish us from others as Singaporeans.

(Goh, 1999, www.singapore21.org/speeches_240499.html)

The five key ideas that form the Singapore 21 vision can be found at Appendix B: 1.

One of the areas identified for development to assist Singapore in becoming a globapolis is the arts. The Ministry of Information and the Arts developed *The Renaissance City* report (2000) to capture the ideology of the globapolis that Singapore wants to become, and the spirit of the new economy. It also acknowledges

² Singapore 21 was a consultative effort by the government to understand how Singaporeans thought and felt about being Singaporean, and how he/she envisioned Singapore’s future. The resulting social compact is a reflection of these voices, and aims to assure Singaporeans that their future is being catered for. It also hopes to instill a loyalty in Singaporeans to the country and to encourage them to be active citizens who contribute to the success of Singapore.

the role the arts can play in nation building, and achieving Singapore's social compact.

The report states:

By calling for a Renaissance Singapore, this is not an attempt to replicate the conditions of post-medieval Europe. Rather, it is the spirit of creativity, innovation, multi-disciplinary learning, socio-economic and cultural vibrancy that we are trying to capture. The vision is a projection of the type of Singapore person, society and nation that we can aspire to.

(MITA, 2000, <http://www.mita.gov.sg/renaissance/htm>)

The Renaissance City envisions Singapore as a 'global city for the arts'. It will be the meeting place of culture from all over the world, and aims to reach a level of development comparable to cities like Hong Kong, Glasgow and Melbourne in 5 – 10 years. The report sees Singapore becoming the 'gateway to Asia' whereby it will showcase the arts in Asia to the rest of the world, and vice versa. While the report acknowledges the intrinsic benefits of the arts, 'the encouragement of a keen aesthetic sense among Singaporeans and the improvement in the standard of our arts will benefit us and society'³, the emphasis seems to be on the economic benefits of becoming a Renaissance City. It highlights the importance of creativity in the new economy and how the arts can be 'a dynamic means of facilitating creative abilities'⁴. These creative abilities and the arts further combine to create new products of value to consumers. The report also recognizes that the arts is a business sector in its own right and has a significant impact on the economy. Furthermore, the arts contribute to the image and attractiveness of Singapore, benefiting tourism. It also encourages investments and attracts foreign talent to the country.

³ Chapter Four, *Introduction*, pt. 1.

⁴ Chapter Four, *Creativity in the Future Economy*, pt. 13.

The government recognizes that for New Singapore to succeed, the necessary skills, values and attitudes it embodies need to be instilled in young Singaporeans – the future of the nation.

Education in Singapore

Education is a top priority in Singapore, with a significant amount of resources being spent on creating a high quality education system⁵. Singaporean students are known to be internationally robust in the areas of mathematics and science, attaining high standards in international rankings and competitions. However, the government recognized that excelling in the math and sciences was insufficient for the new economy, with education in Singapore making shifts in recent years to take into account global changes. The former Senior Minister of State for Education, Dr. Aline Wong stated:

Singapore's success in the 21st century depends on the ability of the education system to equip our young with the skills, values and mindsets to cope with an uncertain future.

(Ministry of Education, 2000: 61)

This desire to equip young Singaporeans with the appropriate 'skills, values and mindsets' has been translated into a Mission and Vision for the Ministry of Education. Its mission is 'Moulding the Future of our Nation' (ibid: 6), where people are placed at

⁵ In 2001, the government committed to increasing expenditure on education from 3.6% of the country's GDP to 4.5% or about \$1.5 billion more each year. Singapore was ranked third out of forty-nine developed and developing countries on whether its educational system 'meets the needs of a competitive

the center of this future. Its vision is 'Thinking Schools, Learning Nation' (ibid: 7), which takes into account the importance of developing innovative ideas, and creating new knowledge in the new economy. Skills such as **creativity** and **critical thinking** are prized, and schools are to encourage a love for learning in students. This will ensure that the workforce and economy has a constant supply of resources. However, it is also at a young age that Singapore's social compact needs to be instilled and this responsibility falls upon the shoulders of education. The yearbook of the Ministry of Education states that 'while nurturing the capabilities of our youth to be global players, the challenge is also to develop them as responsible members of the community and loyal citizens of Singapore' (ibid: 9). The key ideas from the Singapore 21 vision are woven into the Ministry's vision.

The over-riding paradigm that resulted from the Ministry of Education's mission and vision is to provide an 'ability-driven education' system. This lies in the belief that 'every child matters, and has a valuable contribution to make to society and his country' (Ministry of Education, 2000: 10). It places an emphasis on the identification and development of the individual abilities and talents that exist in every student, in order to help them 'excel in different ways' (ibid). The curriculum for an ability-driven education involves the mastery of core skills and values that are practiced through curricular and co-curricular activities⁶.

economy', by the 2001 World Competitiveness Report (Goh, 2001, <http://www1.moe.edu.sg/tdr2001/speeches/spe.htm>).

⁶ The eight core skills and values are: literacy and numeracy skills, information skills, thinking skills and creativity, communication skills, knowledge application skills, social and cooperative skills, self-management skills, and character development.

Evaluating the success of an ability-driven education involves translating aims into desired outcomes. The Ministry of Education developed the 'Desired Outcomes of Education' (MOE, 2000, [http:// www1.moe.edu.sg/ desired.htm](http://www1.moe.edu.sg/desired.htm)) to exemplify what teachers and students should strive for at the different stages in education. There are altogether four levels of outcomes: Primary, Secondary, Junior College, and Post-secondary and Tertiary⁷. Together, they encompass the mission and vision of education in Singapore, with their premise of providing each student a **holistic education**. This involves 'developing the child morally, intellectually, physically, socially and aesthetically' (ibid). However, in reality, emphasis on the different areas is unequal, with the focus sharpest on intellectual development, and the least on aesthetic development.

Arts Education in Singapore

The arts have always played a minimal role in the Singapore education system. This is because they were, and are still largely viewed as 'soft, irrational, and incidental to our needs as logical, rational beings'; as recently admitted by an ex-Senior Minister of State (Wong, 2001, <http://www.gov.sg/sgip/announce/070801aw.htm>). Therefore, amongst the art forms, only art and music are offered as subjects within the school curriculum. Although they are compulsory subjects between the ages of seven to fourteen, students have a minimal exposure to these subjects as compared to the rest of the 'cognitive' subjects. Furthermore, opportunities for students interested in

⁷ These outcomes are listed in detail in Appendix B: 2.

specializing in these art forms vary⁸, and in the case of music, students need to excel at their academic subjects before they are allowed to elect it as an examinable subject.

Students who are interested in pursuing art and music without specializing in them as subjects usually participate in co-curricular activities organized by the school. These take the form of clubs and are limited to the number of vacancies available. Art forms such as drama or dance may be pursued in a similar fashion, if offered by the school. Other forms of exposure to the various art forms are through performances staged by external artists at the school, termed assembly plays after the school period they occupy, or by bringing students out to watch performances or view an exhibition.

In recent years, some schools have introduced enrichment programs for students using the arts⁹. This was mostly in response to the Ministry of Education's call to provide a holistic education for students and to diffuse the emphasis on intellectual development found in the curriculum. However, it was left to individual schools to decide on the importance of providing these programs for their students. As a result, aesthetic development in Singapore schools to date has always been inconsistent and mostly neglected.

⁸ Only a handful of schools in Singapore offer opportunities to specialize in music as an examinable GCSE 'O' and 'A' level subject. This is because there is a lack of qualified music teachers. Teachers who are qualified are usually posted to schools with a higher than average academic standard where interested students have to firstly qualify for admission to these schools.

⁹ Enrichment programs are either conducted during curriculum time or after-school hours. They are usually compulsory, and vary in length between a term of about 8 weeks to a year of about 30 weeks. The programs are conducted by either teachers or artists-in-residence, and may differ in type for various cohorts of students.

Some Challenges Faced

The Ministry of Education's vision for education in Singapore faces some challenges if they are to achieve goals previously outlined. Two of these challenges will be highlighted in this study – producing thinking and creative students, and providing an aesthetic education.

Critical Thinking and Creativity

Students in Singapore have generally high academic standards. However, recent studies have shown them to be 'merely "exam-smart" but lacking in depth and capability for critical and independent thinking' (Ong, 1999: 101). Singaporean students are mostly not known to be creative or creators of new knowledge. The local newspaper, *The Straits Times* reports that comparative education expert, Andy Green while visiting Singapore commented that it was difficult for students here to be creative as the larger system also required them to be conformists ('Creativity, system pulls in two directions', 2001, <http://www.straitstimes.asia1.com.sg/singapore/story/0,18/0,3/6/6,00.html>). He noted that creative thinking in Singapore schools was less about 'stimulating the imagination and originality' but more about 'advanced problem-solving techniques' (ibid).

It is agreed that the political climate in Singapore where social conformity, and a non-questioning attitude is encouraged impacts upon the learning climate in the classroom. Teachers are afraid of tackling difficult issues and therefore spoon-feed students with

knowledge from curriculum that has been provided by the state. Critical thinking has mostly been absent from learning experiences, where education has involved the unidirectional flow of knowledge from teacher to student. In a study conducted on two thousand seven hundred and nineteen adolescents in Singapore, researchers found that most were only concerned with taking notes in the classroom, with only half of them making attempts to understand the teacher. Moreover, less than 10% of the adolescents interviewed reported that they were engaged in more 'complex higher-order thinking processes such as applying, hypothesizing and wondering what might happen, analyzing or evaluating the lesson' (Tay-Koay, 1999: 80 - 81).

These challenges to critical thinking and creativity have been recognized by the government, and the Ministry of Education has called for a new type of teacher, who will no longer be a gate-keeper of knowledge, but instead a 'facilitator of knowledge' (Ministry of Education, 2000: 42). Teachers need to inculcate a love for learning in their students, and encourage them to be critical thinkers in order to construct new knowledge. Thus, new methodologies for teaching are required to produce thinking and creative students. However, the process will be challenging even when endorsed by the government. Although the political climate in Singapore is more embracing of dissenting views, it will not contribute enough to lessening this challenge. A change in mindset and ingrained practices is required. These take time and courage.

An Aesthetic Education

The Ministry of Education's *Desired Outcomes of Education* aims to provide a holistic education for students. The document states that all students at the end of their secondary education should 'have an appreciation for aesthetics' (MOE, 2000, <http://www1.moe.edu.sg/desired.htm>). However, there seems to be a lack of concerted effort in providing such experiences for students, as outlined earlier. Furthermore, it seems that arguments used for developing students aesthetically are largely economically based, linking creativity with the arts; a trait required for the new economy, or producing future consumers of artistic products, as seen in *The Renaissance City* report. There is a lack of understanding of an aesthetic education.

Judging from the arts curriculum in schools, only art and music are recognized as legitimate forms of artistic study. Furthermore, until recently, they emphasized mimetic techniques more than creative expression. Even though these art forms are offered in the curriculum, the lack of intensity in exposure to these subjects, and continuity over time make their learning outcomes questionable. Moreover, by determining that only students with good academic grades are allowed to specialize in music signals to students that these artistic disciplines are not equal in importance to traditional 'cognitive-based' subjects. It also fails to take into consideration that students have different abilities and talents, and may not be able to excel in traditional academic subjects. Additionally, the lack of trained music teachers is symptomatic of the wider problem where there is a lack of recognition of the arts as legitimate forms of study or as a vocation, and a lack of opportunities to specialize in music from a young age.

Although students may pursue their interest in the arts through co-curricular activities, these clubs have a limited enrolment, and are conducted after-school hours and therefore of a limited duration. As a result, aesthetic learning in these circumstances is handicapped. Exposure to performances within or external to the school also contribute little to aesthetic education, especially when students have no opportunity to learn about, or participate in these experiences themselves, such as drama or dance. Moreover, assembly performances last no longer than thirty-five minutes in duration, and excursions to the theatre or gallery are scarce.

Even though schools have recently sought opportunities for their students to experience the arts through enrichment programs, they are in the minority. Furthermore, these programs are usually limited to a certain group of students within the school, over a relatively short period of time. This limits the ability to scope and sequence learning, and continuity is an issue. These constraints restrict the outcomes from learning aesthetically. Additionally, the real aims of most enrichment programs are seldom aesthetic based but more personal development inclined, such as instilling confidence in students. Therefore, learning takes place *through*, versus *in* the arts.

To summarize, the arts are still not wholly appreciated for their intrinsic worth in the education system in Singapore, and are viewed as less important than traditional academic subjects. Reviewing the current situation for arts education in Singapore reveals that although the education climate presently is more receptive towards aesthetic learning, radical changes providing students with an aesthetic education are

unlikely to occur. This is unfortunate when considered in light of *The Renaissance City* report as it is uncertain where the producers and consumers of this global city for the arts will emerge from given the shallow experiences provided for young Singaporeans. It is further unsettling to acknowledge that students in Singapore are deprived of an integral form of learning and knowing.

Envisioning a Better Way: A Socratic Education

Socratic learning is:

to reaffirm that education should be primarily concerned with critical reflection, with personal development and with the sustained enquiry into the various forms of meaning. ... They involve **the body, the feelings, the mind and the imagination** (emphasis mine). ... However they are classified, these different activities are *primary forms of understanding*; they need to be generically and equally included in the good curriculum.

(Abbs, 1994: 8)

A strategy to approach the challenges outlined above is to provide students with a Socratic education. A Socratic education views learning as a life-long process that requires students to be critical thinkers and active learners. Knowledge is not transferred but made. Moreover, a Socratic education acknowledges the importance of learning that extends beyond the cognitive to include the bodily and sensory. Its holistic approach to education prizes the role of aesthetic learning and treats it as imperative.

A Socratic education may be examined in more detail by discussing two main components: a critical and constructivist pedagogy, and aesthetic learning.

A Critical and Constructivist Pedagogy

For Singapore to develop future generations of thinking and committed citizens, schools should be crucibles for questioning and learning.

(Ministry of Education, 2000: 30)

Socratic students are required to be critical thinkers, and their teachers need to encourage a questioning disposition towards learning. Additionally, teachers need to teach students how to learn and construct knowledge in order to generate an interest in life-long learning, and for creativity to occur.

Critical theorists point out however, that critical thinking means more than just 'thinking skills' which is a neutralization of the term, 'critical' by 'removing its political and cultural dimensions' and instead 'laundering its analytic potency' (McLaren, 1989: 161). Therefore, being critical means thinking about the 'social function of particular forms of knowledge' and not just about knowledge itself (ibid). This requires teachers and students to address structures that exist politically, economically and socially in society, and not shy away from these potentially difficult, and personal issues. Moreover, it is through addressing these issues that schools are able to produce 'committed citizens', and strengthen Singapore's social compact as students become 'committed to self and social empowerment' (ibid: 183).

Aside from being critical and deconstructing existing knowledge and structures, new understandings or knowledge needs to be constructed. Constructivism refers to the process of change or knowledge construction that occurs in one's thinking as learning occurs. Therefore, knowledge is a process, and is made. It is not static or unchanging,

and requires an active engagement on the part of the learner (Waite-Stupiansky, 1997: 2). Moreover, constructivists believe that ‘fostering appreciation for a multiplicity of truths and options is the “real” mission of education because “real” problems are rarely unidimensional’ (Brooks, 1993: 111). Adopting such a stance enables students to be questioning, and encourages them to be creative and not passive recipients of knowledge that is incontestable. It also means that teachers are no longer the gatekeepers of knowledge but become facilitators of knowledge. Furthermore, planning for student learning should take into account student abilities and pre-existing knowledge to ensure that learning experiences are relevant, and students are engaged in their own learning (ibid: 24). This contributes towards providing an ability-driven education.

Apart from being critical thinkers and constructivists, Socratic learners need to harness their bodies, feelings and imagination in the learning process. This is fulfilled by providing an aesthetic education. Moreover, learning aesthetically also engages the cognitive; a misconception of the arts in education that has led to its secondary status in schools.

Aesthetic Learning

.... (the) aesthetic denotes a mode of sensuous knowing essential for life and development of consciousness; aesthetic response is inevitably through its sensory and physical operations, cognitive in nature. all aesthetic activity as it is developed through the manifold forms of the arts is simultaneously perceptive, affective and **cognitive**; it can offer an education, therefore of the highest order not through the analytical intellect but through the engaged sensibility.

(Abbs, 1987: 53 - 55)

Learning aesthetically involves the senses and works through the mind. It requires perception, feelings and cognition, and is a form of knowledge in itself. This contradicts the myth that the arts are 'soft' and 'feeling' subjects that do not require the mind and are therefore less valid in the educative process. Dewey (1934: 22) defines our senses as the 'meaning of things present in immediate experience' and it cannot be opposed to the mind as it is 'the means by which participation is rendered fruitful through sense'. Therefore, the mind is the organ through which we make meaning through our senses. However, education in the modern and post-modern age has largely forgotten that we perceive through our senses first, and that we are sensory beings. This has led to the divorce of the mind from the senses, and learning experiences are relegated solely to the confines of the cognitive.

Another reason for the diminishing of aesthetic learning in schools can be attributed to the functionalism of modern societies, or what Abbs calls 'the fallacy of Cato' (Abbs, 1994: 7). This fallacy involves the belief that every human activity has a function or practicality, and 'the vast range of human experience and potentiality is subjected to one question: *what use is it?*' (ibid: 7). This mode of thinking still exists in societies today and in education systems. It is evident in the economic drive found in many countries. However, education should be concerned with more than just training, or the acquisition of skills and knowledge for vocational means but should lead to 'a certain mode of consciousness, a delicate, sustained, reflective disposition towards experience, an openness towards potential truth and possible meaning' (ibid: 15). Societies that aim to educate should view learning as a personal development process that exceeds

economic purposes. It should embody the multi-facetedness of life itself that consists of experiences that involve the body, mind and feelings.

Aesthetic learning involves providing students with an arts education. Moreover, it should encompass all forms of art, and not just art and music, the two most common forms of arts subjects taught in schools. This is because 'the expressive disciplines are centrally preoccupied with the sensuous embodiment of representative meaning' and together, form 'an epistemic community' (Abbs, 1989: 210). Each art form, commonly recognized as literature, drama, dance, music, film and art, is different from the other, with forms and processes that contribute uniquely to aesthetic learning, and meaning making. Students should therefore have opportunities to learn all the artistic languages as well as opportunities for specialization. It is vital that schools view the arts as a generic community of subjects, each with potential to provide doorways to making, and understanding experience.

An education in the aesthetic involves learning about the histories, traditional forms and existing works of the various art forms. Students of the aesthetic are called to be 'cultural ecologists' (Abbs, 1987: 4) and learn the languages of the artistic disciplines. This involves interacting with mediums and materials that carry with them 'a history, a repertoire of uses, of working conventions, of established connections and meanings, both overt and hidden' (ibid: 57), ensuring that students are equipped with sufficient knowledge and skills in order to understand, as well as generate new forms of knowing. The 'conservationist aesthetic' (ibid: 4) provides for students to learn from the past to inform the future, allowing innovation to occur.

However, besides being conservationists, aesthetic learners embrace 'symbolic creativity'. Willis states that this is because 'being human – human be-ing-ness – means to be creative in the sense of remaking the world for ourselves as we make and find our own place and identity' (Willis, 1990: 11). Furthermore, it is necessary as we are essentially 'communicating and producing beings' (ibid: 10). This involves an interaction between knowledge and skills learnt as 'cultural ecologists', as well as personal experiences and interactions from daily life, what he terms as the 'grounded aesthetic'. The 'grounded aesthetic' acknowledges that our daily lives are 'full of expressions, signs and symbols' through which we 'seek creatively to establish their presence, identity and meaning' (ibid: 1). Examples can be found in corporate culture such as 'yuppie' culture, and music and dance culture such as the punk and techno movements. The grounded aesthetic is 'the yeast of common culture' (ibid: 23). Therefore, to learn aesthetically is also to involve, and include experiences from daily life. This ensures that meaning making is relevant and reflects, as well as extends experience. Through engaging with the grounded aesthetic, we connect with ourselves and with others, contributing back to our communal culture.

What does the process of aesthetic learning look like? Aesthetic learning takes place within an aesthetic field; a process of four stages that Abbs likens to a 'web of energy' that feeds upon itself:

.... (it) implies an intricate web of energy where the parts are seen in relationship, in a state of reciprocal flow between tradition and innovation, between form and impulse, between the society and the individual, between the four phases of *making, presenting, responding and evaluating* which mark the four essential elements of the aesthetic field.

(Abbs, 1987: 55)

The aesthetic field accounts for both the conservationist and grounded aesthetic. It also reminds us of the larger role an aesthetic education has in society, where through ‘symbolic creativity’, a relationship is formed between the individual and society. The four phases¹⁰ of the aesthetic field provides a practical model for learning through the body, mind and senses that can be translated into the classroom.

What are some of the outcomes of learning aesthetically? Besides re-dressing the balance between our cognitive and affective lives resulting in a more holistic education, and equipping young people with an alternative ‘language’ for understanding and meaning making, learning aesthetically also contributes towards intelligence, creativity and one’s personal development.

¹⁰ The *making* phase of the field requires students to be learnt in the discipline of the art form and together with his/her grounded aesthetic to put together, or form a piece of work (Abbs 1987: 57 – 58). This work requires *presenting* to an audience; private or public as a work ‘exists in its action on the senses and imagination of the audience. No audience – no aesthetic’ (ibid: 58).

The third phase in the field occurs as the audience is *responding* to a piece of work. Responses are often intuitive and sensory; involving the affect, and is, according to Abbs, to be encouraged. This is to nurture ‘trust in the authority of the aesthetic form’ and ‘to cultivate the aesthetic response before works of art; not the political or historical or conceptual’ (ibid: 60). This acknowledges the primacy of the senses and affect as humans, and learning to trust them as forms of knowledge.

Finally, understanding our responses and making meaning from them involves *evaluating* them. It requires us to ‘organize the complex elements of our aesthetic response’ and ‘to formulate the aesthetic response conceptually’ (ibid: 61). This activity requires cognition. Evaluation completes the aesthetic field and draws art back into the community, ‘into the imagination and sensibility of human experience’ (ibid: 59). This contribution to the identity and evolution of society, and the art form further provides continuing impetus for the aesthetic field.

Extending Aesthetic Learning

Many arguments have been touted in getting education systems to provide, and sustain meaningful arts education programs in schools. These arguments have drawn from the fields of cognitive research to social development studies. The literature reviewed for this study examined three schools of thought that are relevant to the aims of education today, and hopes to reinforce the importance of aesthetic learning in schools. They are: the theory of multiple intelligences, creativity, and the contribution of the arts to one's personal development.

Multiple Intelligences

The theory of multiple intelligences by Howard Gardner emerged in the 1980s and has since amassed a huge following in education. A psychologist, and now an educationist, his theories have been used by arts educators to advocate for a strong place for aesthetic learning in any curriculum. The theory of multiple intelligences demonstrates that there is more than one type of intelligence, and intelligence is not limited to the cognitive. It also reinforces the benefits of learning aesthetically where learners can be found to be engaging, and developing the majority of intelligences.

Gardner (1983: x) defines intelligence as 'the ability to solve problems, or to create products, that are valued within one or more cultural settings'. Intelligence is recognized as a value construct that is determined by societies, and may be viewed differently in each society. It is therefore not a monolithic construct. Gardner also

found that studies in intelligence traditionally focused on logical-mathematical and linguistic measurements that were biased when considered against the range of human potential (ibid: xvi). His research thus sought to find what other types of intelligences existed, and therefore ought to be pursued and developed in order for people to realize, and harness their full potential.

Gardner identified eight types of intelligences and continued research seeks to discover the presence of more. They are: linguistic; logical-mathematical; spatial; musical; bodily-kinaesthetic; interpersonal; intrapersonal; and naturalist intelligence¹¹ (Campbell, 1999: xvi). Every individual should be able to develop all eight intelligences albeit to varying degrees of prowess, and most likely excelling in only one or two intelligences.

The implications of this theory for education lie in providing students with a broad spectrum of learning experiences. It means recognizing that intelligence extends beyond subjects that prize linguistic and logical-mathematical development, and curriculum should also develop the other six intelligences. To deprive learners of this opportunity would be to prevent them from realizing and fulfilling their full potential. Moreover, students who do not excel at the traditional intelligences may avoid suffering from a low self-esteem and personal failure as they prove to be intelligent in other equally important areas. Gardner (1993: 9) states that people who develop 'their particular spectrum of intelligences' engage a 'biopsychological potential' (ibid: 36) where they feel 'more engaged and competent, and therefore more inclined to serve the

¹¹ The definition of each of these intelligences may be found at Appendix B: 3.

society in a constructive way'. Developing students' multiple intelligences also contributes to achieving an ability-driven education where differing abilities in students are identified and harnessed.

Apart from developing one's naturalist intelligence, it is difficult to deny that learning in the arts contributes towards developing the other seven intelligences; from putting artistic forms and conventions to practice, to putting together a production; and as learning takes place within the aesthetic field. Moreover, no other subject possesses the unique ability of the artistic disciplines to develop the majority of intelligences simultaneously, reinforcing the role of aesthetic learning in education.

Creativity

In the knowledge age, our successes depend on our ability to absorb, process and synthesize knowledge through constant value innovation. Creativity will move into the center of our economic life because it is a critical component of a nation's ability to remain competitive.

(MITA, 2000, <http://www.mita.gov.sg/renaissance/htm>)

Creativity is a buzzword in developed economies internationally as countries prepare for a knowledge-based, innovation-driven economic market. Creative individuals will be the driving force of the workplace in the 21st century and societies are focusing their resources on developing, and harnessing creativity. The above quotation taken from *The Renaissance City* in Singapore reflects the voice of the larger creativity movement found globally.

Although creativity is not a new concept, it is still not understood fully. Ongoing research discounts old interpretations, and continues to throw new light on the topic. Creativity was once thought to only belong to the domain of the arts but has since been found to exist in other disciplines as well. However, the arts are still commonly linked to creativity, and have found new resonance in the new economy, exemplified by the Creative Industries¹². In the Creative Industries, the arts will have ‘a great deal to contribute in terms of offering new value propositions to consumers’ (MITA, 2000, <http://www.mita.gov.sg/renaissance/htm>)¹³, reflected in the products marketed and sold.

The increase in interest in creativity, and the introduction of the Creative Industries has led to a review and renewal of arts education in schools¹⁴. In Singapore, the arts are recognized as vehicles for developing creativity in students, as stated by former Senior Minister of State for Education, Aline Wong. She states that ‘innovation, creative thinking, problem-solving skills’ are reasons for ‘putting a stronger emphasis on the teaching and learning of the arts in our schools’ (Wong, 2001, <http://www.gov.sg/sgip/announce/070801aw.htm>). Consequently, developing creativity is used as a valid argument by arts education advocates for more, and a higher quality of arts education programs in schools, and has led recently to some progress in arts education initiatives by the Ministry of Education.

¹² These industries involve the artistic disciplines and other forms of culture, such as fashion, photography, etc. in their ability to provide new ideas, or content for industries. It often requires interdisciplinary collaborations, and increasingly the use of technology.

¹³ Chapter 4, *Creativity in the Future Economy*, pt. 14.

¹⁴ In the UK, the government has drawn up a policy paper, *Culture and Creativity: The Next Ten Years* (2001), dedicated to the development of the Creative Industries. Education and the arts are essential components of the policy, where new partnerships are being sought between schools, artists/arts organizations and businesses to ensure students are given opportunities to develop their creative potential.

However, the state and status of arts education in Singapore schools presently is insufficient to produce creative individuals who will meet the needs of the Creative Industries. This perhaps stems from a lack of real understanding of creativity, and how it should be encouraged¹⁵.

Research for this study found that the creative process resonates strongly with aesthetic learning. This process involves three thought-processes: 'reflectiveness', 'transformational impulses from the unconscious', and 'changing the world' (Feldman, Csikszentmihakyi & Gardner, 1994: 28 - 38).

'Reflectiveness' is the 'ability to make possible the belief that we can know ourselves, can hold our experiences and the experience of others up for examination' (ibid: 32). This ability is foundational to aesthetic learning and exists in the forming and responding phase of the aesthetic field. It is also the hallmark of a Socratic education where students are required to be critical thinkers. 'Transformational impulses from the unconscious' refers to our ability to 'imagine changes that might actually be brought into existence and placed into the crafted world of human culture' (ibid). This is commonly understood as using our imagination, a process that is highly encouraged in the artistic disciplines in the creation of symbolic products.

¹⁵ The arts have traditionally been associated with creativity perhaps because pieces of work or products are produced regularly in order for judgments to be made. In order to assess creativity, there needs to exist creative products. Moreover, the symbolic and often abstract nature of the arts lends a uniqueness to its products not frequently encountered in common culture. It is this difference or originality that often results in creativity being associated with the arts.

Finally, 'changing the world' is the belief that 'unconscious thought is motivated by a natural desire to transform, to change, to make things different from the way they were' (ibid: 35). Researchers call this a special kind of consciousness involving the realization that one has the power to make the world into a different place. This consciousness is harnessed in the arts as artists form, and present their works to interact with, and communicate with society. This consciousness is the basis of an artist's relationship with his or her audience. It is also harnessed in a constructivist paradigm where knowledge is constantly made and re-made to form new interpretations and knowledge.

Knowing that creative processes exist in all aesthetic learning reinforces the role of an arts education in schools. However, creative processes exist in all types of learning but perhaps is more evidenced in aesthetic learning because it directly engages the imagination and feelings. In *Out of Our Minds*, Robinson (2001: 154) reminds us that creativity involves both the cognitive and affective, as does all conscious and unconscious thought. It also requires intuition, and 'leaps of the imagination'. Learning that stifles our feeling-life and imagination hinders creativity.

What is creativity? Creativity is not solely a cognitive trait residing within an individual. It involves the affect, and needs to be developed and allowed to emerge. Moreover, it is culturally dependent and requires the co-operation of other people in order to be validated. Like intelligence, one is only creative if a society or culture deems it so. Furthermore, what is creative in one culture might not be regarded alike in another.

Gardner defines creativity as:

... creativity should not be thought of as inhering principally in the brain, the mind, or the personality of a single individual. Rather, creativity should be thought of as emerging from the interactions of three nodes: the individual with his or her own profile of competencies and values; the domains available for study and mastery within a culture; and the judgments rendered by the field that is deemed competent within a culture.

(Gardner, 1983: xvii)

Feldman, Csikszentmihaly and Gardner (1994: 20 – 23) explain creativity using the concept of the ‘Domain Individual Field Interaction’, also known as ‘The Locus of Creativity’¹⁶. In this model, creativity is an interaction between an individual, his or her area of study/involvement, and the amount of support or co-operation provided for the individual.

This theory on creativity when transposed onto the relationship between education and creativity has important implications. It questions the view that only some individuals are born creative, or that creativity is a trait that can be nurtured and applied across the board. Instead, creativity requires focused areas of study, and is a subjective endeavor. These researchers further state that mastery of a domain is required in order for creativity to occur in that particular domain. This also acknowledges that creative endeavors only occur after a sufficient amount of learning in a domain. Like the theory of multiple intelligences, it is rare for one to be creative in more than two domains

¹⁶ A domain is defined as ‘the structure and organization of a body of knowledge evolved to contain and express certain distinct forms of information’, and can be understood as areas of study, or subjects in education (Feldman, Csikszentmihaly & Gardner, 2000: 16). The field is ‘the social and cultural aspects’ that impact upon a domain; intangible as well as tangible (ibid: 22). It encompasses the domain ‘with sources of support, instruction, socialization, tradition, evaluation, and recognition’. Moreover, the existence of ‘a well-organized and subtly structured field is a good indicator that creative activity has been valued in a domain for a long time’ (ibid: 36).

(ibid: 23). Students should therefore be allowed opportunities to identify which domains they have an interest, and affinity for, and further allowed to specialize in them to encourage creativity. This move supports an ability-driven education. Consequently, opportunities for students to experience in-depth and continuous aesthetic learning is necessary if the arts are expected to foster creativity.

Additionally, when considering creativity in the arts, the 'field' plays an important role as well. The amount of support arts education receives, both in terms of physical resources, and human expertise impacts upon interpretations of creativity. Artistic disciplines that suffer from a lack of learning time, space, materials etc. will have more difficulty producing creative students. Additionally, teachers who are not trained in the arts, or where there is a lack of a coherent arts education program, creativity will fail to prosper. This scenario arises because creativity requires forming judgments or making evaluations on a product or piece of work. Only those experienced in an art form will be able to make informed judgments, and only when a well-established arts program exists will students receive consistent, and clear evaluations on their work.

The highly subjective nature of creativity, and its dependency on external factors in order for it to originate have led Gardner, Feldman and Csikszentmihaly to rephrase the question on creativity from 'what is creativity?' to 'where is creativity?'. This shift in interpretation signals to schools that they have a large role to play in ensuring creativity is developed. Schools need to provide opportunities for students to identify, and develop themselves in domains in which they can excel, and create an appropriate environment for creativity to flourish.

Personal Development

Aside from using arguments on creativity to promote arts education in schools, arts educators have also promoted the benefits of learning in the arts towards students' personal development. It is often said that the arts contribute toward developing confidence, expression, teamwork, amongst other skills and attributes. A report developed by the Arts Education Partnership and The President's Committee on the Arts and Humanities in the US, *The Champions of Change* (1999), consisted of several studies investigating the benefits of aesthetic learning.

The studies in *The Champions of Change* involved studying arts education programs in schools as well as arts organizations, and encompassed several art forms. Studies which focused on arts education in schools found that students involved with the arts had better language skills, were more creative, and were viewed as generally more competent than their peers. They also had a better self-concept, and were better adjusted to face the work force and deal with life's situations and experiences. Other traits observed in this group of students were a higher level of tolerance and empathy towards others. This was attributed to the 'potential opportunities to interact with students to whom one might not gravitate in the ordinary course of school life, including students from other economic strata and other racial groups' (Catterall, Chapleau & Iwanaga, 1999: 15).

In particular, one of the studies found 'a constellation of capacities' that existed, and resulted from students who learnt aesthetically (Burton, Horowitz & Abeles, 1999: 43).

These researchers found that learning in the arts involved a set of ‘cognitive competencies’ or ‘habits of mind’¹⁷, as well as ‘an array of personal dispositions’¹⁸ (ibid). Together, they formed ‘constellation of capacities’. The researchers explain these capacities arise in aesthetic learning that includes several art forms over a period of time.

Additionally, they were transferable to other areas of learning that required a similar ‘constellation of capacities’. Furthermore, this transference process was not unidirectional but instead dynamic and interactive, where ‘the presence of habits of mind that emerge in both arts learning and learning in other subjects consists of a dialectic involving the cumulative effects of participating disciplines’ (ibid: 43). Therefore, this study not only demonstrated clearly the wider benefits of an arts education towards the individual development of students, but also its contribution to learning in other subjects. The use of these particular capacities in other learning areas further contributed to their development, strengthening the potential for learning and meaning making.

The studies in *The Champions of Change* clearly show some of the benefits of an arts education. These outcomes however, were only observed in ‘high-arts’ students, or students who had experienced an education in an art form(s) over a significant duration

¹⁷ These included elaborative and creative thinking, fluency, originality, focused perception, and imagination. They involved ‘a rich interweaving of intuitive, practical, and logical forms of thought’ which is ‘typical of most creative artists, scientists, and thinkers in general’ (Burton, Horowitz & Abeles, 1999: 42).

¹⁸ These were defined as risk taking, task persistence, ownership of learning, and perceptions of academic accomplishment in school (ibid).

of time¹⁹. This could consist of a combination of curricular and co-curricular activities, as well as art forms. Furthermore, studies in the report demonstrated that benefits of learning in the arts are not immediately observable, and only occur after a period of prolonged aesthetic experiences. In the above-mentioned study, the researchers looked at developments for children and adolescents over the period spent between the 8th and 12th grades, and additionally enlisted the National Educational Longitudinal Survey, a panel study which followed more than 25,000 students in American secondary schools for ten years. The researchers found that findings became significant only after a period of time, and incrementally increased with the duration of exposure to arts learning (Catterall, Chapleau & Iwanaga, 1999: 4).

The study conducted by Burton, Horowitz and Abeles (1999: 45) similarly had their findings confirmed in schools 'where young people had pursued several arts over a duration of time'. These two findings that form crucial criteria for reaping the benefits of an aesthetic education reinforces the need for coherent, in-depth and sustained arts education programs in schools. These programs should provide for learning in the various art forms, as well as opportunities for specialization to ensure that the benefits from an aesthetic education are maximized.

¹⁹ An example of a 'high-arts' student would be, 'those who have attended a drama class once per week or more as of 8th grade, participated in a drama club as of 8th grade, taken drama coursework in grade 10, and participated in a school play or musical in grades 10 and 12 – or at least most of the above (Catterall, Chapleau & Iwanaga, 1999: 14).

Implications of A Socratic Education for Singapore

In an age of cultural and spiritual impoverishment all the institutions of education have no choice but to become cultural centres, critical of their own society. In a muddled and distracted age, an age in which culture has deteriorated into a commodity, they must fashion, as best they can, honest and creative forms of symbolization, forms which promise to heal the division between thought and feeling forms which suggest the outlines of a new integration of man.

(Abbs, 1979: 86)

A Socratic education that involves 'the body, the feelings, the mind and the imagination' will prepare young Singaporeans for the 21st century and beyond. It will provide the necessary attitudes, intelligences, skills and values for survival, and success in a globapolis; overcoming the challenges facing education in Singapore outlined earlier.

Research undertaken in the literature review states that an education system that encompasses Socratic learning encourages critical thinking amongst its students, equipping them with the necessary skills to question and investigate knowledge, and experiences – political, economic and social. It claims it will also teach, and encourage them to construct knowledge and make new meanings. A love for learning will be fostered, as will creativity and innovation. Furthermore, learning aesthetically marks the return of holistic learning experiences that incorporate the sensory and intuitive, empowering the meaning making process. It provides learners with new tools, strategies and ways of knowing to create new knowledge. Learning in the arts also fulfills the aims of an ability-driven education where students predisposed to the arts

are allowed opportunities to excel in them; further resonating with the theory of multiple intelligences.

Through experiencing a Socratic education, Singaporeans will be capable of envisioning, and creating futures. These futures will contribute towards 'Singapore 21', where young Singaporeans will be confident of their identities, and place in Singapore; where they will feel ownership and responsibility towards creating desired experiences for themselves, and for others, making schools what Abbs terms 'cells of creative living' (Abbs, 1979: 86). They will also benefit from the life-skills and cognitive competencies aesthetic learning brings; all of which are essential for students' personal development, and will be harnessed as members of society and the workforce.

A Socratic education in Singapore schools will further resonate with *The Renaissance City* report. It will cultivate the Renaissance Singaporean who is 'an individual with an open, analytical and creative mind that is capable of acquiring, sharing, applying and creating new knowledge' (MITA, 2000, <http://www.mita.gov.sg/renaissance/htm>)²⁰. The Renaissance Singaporean will be able to contribute effectively to making Singapore a vibrant city where creativity thrives, and the arts flourish. This is not only found in the role of an artist, but also when he or she 'appreciates, respects and constantly seeks out the work of artists, drawing from them inspiration, self-renewal and creative inputs' (ibid)²¹.

²⁰ Chapter 5, *The Renaissance Singaporean*, pt. 5.

²¹ Chapter 5, *The Renaissance Singaporean*, pt. 9.

However, more attention and effort must be paid in education towards creating this Renaissance Singaporean, particularly in the area of an aesthetic education. Students should be allowed to study all the art forms and not just art and music. Moreover, coherent, in-depth, and sustained programs need to be provided that also allow opportunities for specialization. Additionally, the necessary support structures and resources for a well-rounded aesthetic education need to be present, and educators and policy-makers need to be patient when evaluating results.

In conclusion, although Singapore is on the highway of survival and success in the 21st century, its education system needs to meet the challenges of equipping young Singaporeans sufficiently for the future. This is best provided by a Socratic education as an education that is based on the principles of Catoism and economic prosperity will not transport young Singaporeans safely into 'an uncertain future' of rapid change (Ministry of Education, 2000: 61). Instead, Abbs (1994: 8) states that education is 'an activity of mind, a particular emotional and critical orientation towards experience', and 'the expression and development of a primary impulse for truth', an instinct that we inherit as part of our nature (ibid: 16). It is therefore the role of schools to instill this love for learning, for searching for truth; creating students schooled in the experience of life, as it is these attitudes, values and skills that will see them through the smooth and bumpy roads that lie ahead.

METHODOLOGY

More than likely, each of us will emerge (from the research) a slightly different person than the one we were when we began, not only with an increased knowledge of the phenomenon we set out to study, but also increased knowledge of ourselves.

(Ely, 1991:108)

This chapter in the thesis will attempt to provide readers with what Silverman (2000: 236) calls, ‘the natural history of my research’. It will take readers through the journey undertaken for this study – involving two countries, six school settings, and discussions with various artists and educationists involved with drama in education. It will also expose my beliefs, biases and emotions as a researcher, and how this may have impacted upon the research. Finally, the chapter will address issues concerning how the research was conducted, and findings analyzed and presented in this thesis.

Qualitative Research

... qualitative research involves an interpretive, naturalistic approach to the world. This means that qualitative researchers study things in their natural settings, attempting to make sense of, or to interpret, phenomena in terms of the meanings people bring to them.

(Denzin, 2000: 3)

Qualitative research was the modus operandi of this study and chosen to gain an understanding of the thoughts, feelings and processes of those involved in drama in education. Ely (1991: 4) states that, ‘qualitative researchers want those who are studied to speak for themselves, to provide their perspectives in words and actions’.

Furthermore, this approach allowed me to observe the participants in a natural setting, the classroom which afforded me insights which would not be as rich and meaningful if only read about, or described.

Qualitative researchers recognize that it is impossible for any research to be objective because it requires interpretation. Eisner borrows from Dewey's work when he describes the research process as 'transactive'. He states that, 'the *transactive* is conceived of as the locus of human experience. It is the product of the interaction of two *postulated* entities, the objective and the subjective' (Eisner, 1991: 52). Because the world is mediated through our minds, it can never be totally objective because our knowledge is formed from our experiences, many of which are subjective. Ely goes one step further to embrace this transactive state:

We believe that qualitative study is forged in the transaction among what is done and learned and what is felt by the researcher. It is an intensely recursive, personal process, and while this may be the hallmark of all sound research, it is crucial to every aspect of the qualitative way of looking at life.

(Ely, 1991: 1)

Therefore, this study acknowledges that it is impossible for research to be objective. It does not strive to be. Instead, it reveals the process involved in conducting the research, the thought-processes, as well as emotions felt so that the reader may interpret the findings and conclusions through my eyes. This will allow the reader to locate more meaning from the study, and in turn, make new meaning through their own transactive states.

Purpose of the Field Work

The importance of conducting fieldwork for this study lay in wanting to understand the practices behind an aesthetic education. Although existing literature on aesthetic education shows its importance and rightful place in any curriculum, it was important for this study to see how this takes place, and whether it was being achieved in the field. Furthermore, while much has been written about the value of an aesthetic education, there has not been the same analysis in identifying the factors in an educational setting for this to occur. Most of these studies focus on teacher practice and do not look at the overall schooling experience. This study takes a holistic look at how an aesthetic education might be provided in schools.

The purpose of the fieldwork in Australia was to observe significant practices taking place in drama in education in Queensland schools, and evaluating the feasibility for them to be implemented in Singapore school settings. In Queensland, drama has been in the curriculum for more than twenty years, first as Speech and Drama, and then Drama. However, in Singapore, drama is still only a co-curricular activity offered in some schools and not a curriculum subject except for a handful of schools who have decided independently to use drama. This is in all cases solely as a teaching methodology. At the beginning of this study, I was not sure what these significant practices might be apart from experiences gained from previous work in drama in education in Singapore. I was also aware that what might be significant in Queensland might not be in Singapore, even though both countries are developed nations and economically quite similar.

The fieldwork in Singapore was mainly to consolidate and re-affirm my previous observations and experiences. Contact with drama in education was mostly through work done as Manager of the Theatre For Youth Branch²² at The Necessary Stage (TNS), a non-profit theatre company in Singapore actively involved in education work²³. It was also to discover new findings that were previously overlooked as the fieldwork provided me the opportunity to be a researcher rather than a manager. It allowed me to observe the drama in education classroom more closely, and take informed notes. I was also able to pursue areas of interest to the research which was previously impossible.

Conducting the fieldwork after reviewing literature on aesthetic education, and its practices also allowed me to review my previous experiences in a new light, and conduct the fieldwork with new understanding(s). It also provided me with a 'language' to record and make sense of these experiences. I was keen to observe other drama in education programs in schools other than those conducted by TNS to gain a wider understanding of the field in Singapore, in order to make relevant and meaningful recommendations in this study.

As the study began, I realized my aim was to take a holistic look at the schooling experience in terms of aesthetic education. I formulated numerous questions by the time I was ready to conduct the fieldwork and struggled as to how to organize them

²² The Branch was re-named Theatre For Youth & Community in 2001.

²³ As manager, I facilitated the introduction of a drama in education program, *Development Through Drama* into some Singapore schools, in 1999. It was a rare occurrence where drama was conducted during curriculum time, and over a period of at least a year. Other experiences in drama in education came from contact with teachers, artists, educators, and policy makers through the course of the work, and by organizing focus groups, a national symposium, and workshop on drama in education.

coherently in order for findings later to be meaningful. As I was simultaneously reviewing literature for the study, I stumbled upon Eisner's 'ecology of schooling'. Eisner (1991:73) suggested that investigations into education could be classified into five dimensions: the Intentional, Structural, Curricular, Pedagogical, and Evaluative, collectively termed, 'the ecology of schooling'²⁴. These five dimensions were useful in organizing my readings and fieldwork, and provided for a more coherent analysis later.

Taking a holistic look at practices that lead to aesthetic education in schools, and using the 'ecology of schooling' as a compass resulted in an organizational matrix for the fieldwork. This matrix involved school settings both in Queensland and Singapore, as well as theatre companies, artists, drama educators, curriculum writers, policy-makers, and academics in both countries²⁵. This allowed for a holistic look at drama education in schools from more than one perspective, and also acknowledged that schools are part of a wider society and are impacted upon, and impact upon others. Furthermore, the findings from each school setting, and where appropriate, findings from interviewing others outside this setting, was examined against the five dimensions of 'the ecology of schooling'. A broad series of questions were developed for each dimension, and can be found at Appendix B: 4.

²⁴ The intentional dimension, 'deals with the goals or aims that are formulated for the school or a classroom.' Furthermore, these need to be examined closely to see whether these goals or aims take place in reality, and are conveyed effectively, what he terms the 'hidden curriculum' (Eisner, 1991: 73). The structural dimension looks at the 'organizational forms of schools' (ibid: 74) and deals with formal structures such as timetabling, space allocation, and so on. The curricular dimension focuses on 'the quality of the curriculum's content and goals and the activities employed to engage students in it' (ibid: 75). The pedagogical dimension casts the focus on teachers and their methods, and finally, the evaluative dimension looks at how assessment takes place in schools (ibid: 77 – 81).

²⁵ A visual representation of the matrix can be found at Appendix B: 5.

The Research Settings and Participants

Australia

The research in Australia was confined to Brisbane, Queensland. This was geographically suitable as it was where I was located, and had both primary and secondary schools that offered drama as a subject. Moreover, a few of these schools had a strong reputation for their drama programs, and proved to be rich sites for researching significant practice in aesthetic education. I chose to conduct the fieldwork in one primary and one secondary school so that I was able to observe a range of drama practice catered to different age groups. This also gave me the opportunity to observe primary and secondary drama syllabi operating in the classroom.

Another secondary school setting was later added as I felt doubtful whether the original one chosen would highlight significant classroom practice. However, I continued research at this original site to gain a better understanding of drama practices, and to ensure my judgments were not premature. It was useful that out of the two secondary schools observed, one was a public school, and the other, private as this contributed to the diversity of research settings. I had originally wanted to observe drama at another primary school, preferably a public school and one not trialling the new primary drama syllabus. This was to contrast with the existing primary school chosen. However, finding a suitable setting of this nature that was known for significant practice in the Brisbane area proved difficult as there are few primary schools who have drama as a subject in their curriculum.

The research settings and participants²⁶ in Brisbane were:

1. **Blessed Heart College**

A Catholic all-boys college catering for students years 5 – 12 (ten to seventeen years old). It is an inner-city college within a residential area. The college has a mix of students from diverse economic backgrounds although its students are mainly Italian and Anglo-Saxon. The College used to be an old farm and occupies large grounds with two main wings – the primary and secondary which consist of a variety of buildings and rooms of different sizes. It is low-rise and has a brick and glass feel to it, making it homey. There is a chapel on the school-grounds.

Teacher: Jenny

Jenny is a part-time specialist drama teacher at Blessed Heart College. She teaches a total of eleven hours a week at the school, for students years 5 – 7 (ten to twelve years old). She has been teaching at the school since 2000. Jenny has a background, and training in the performing arts, and teaching. She is a very experienced drama in education practitioner who has accrued a vast amount of

²⁶ Recommendations for the research settings selected for the fieldwork was by my supervisor who is one of the pioneers of drama in education in Queensland, and since I was unfamiliar with the drama in education field in Brisbane. This was important as the purpose of the study in Australia was to observe significant practice. The research participants in these education settings were known to my supervisor who helped me make the first point of contact with them, and gained their consent to participate in this study. I then proceeded to introduce myself, and explained the study. Similarly, recommending, and gaining the consent of research participants outside the school setting such as curriculum writers and theatre workers to be participants in the fieldwork was mostly through my supervisor, after we agreed on the scope of the study, and purpose for involving these participants in the fieldwork.

diverse experience in this field, from being involved in drama, youth theatre, and drama in education at both state and school levels for more than twelve years. Jenny continues to actively contribute to the growth of drama in education in Queensland, and is sought after as a consultant. She was also one of the practitioners spear-heading the development, and trialling of the new *The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus*.

Jenny's professionalism, and years of experience in drama in education can be witnessed in the classroom. She is an effective teacher who understands the intricacies of an aesthetic education well. A firm, yet warm and approachable teacher, it is obvious the students like her, and enjoy drama classes. Tangible learning is easily observed in Jenny's classroom. Jenny is also very well-versed and familiar with drama, and drama in education academia. She is on top of her practice. This comes across in our interview, and other contact times with her. This contributes toward Jenny being respected in the wider drama in education field.

2. Springvale State High School

Springvale is an inner-city co-educational public school that is located within a residential area. It caters for students years 8 – 12 (thirteen to seventeen years old) and has a primary school equivalent situated nearby. It is also located near a tertiary institution. The grounds of the school are spread out and its buildings are more high-rise compared to Blessed Heart College. They have a concrete

feel generally, making it look more like an institution although the performing arts block is low-rise and a separate structure from the rest of the school. Springvale State High School serves 66 feeder schools and has a diverse mix of students, from different socio-economic and cultural backgrounds. Its performing arts department is known to have a good reputation, with many senior students traveling a significant distance to do the arts at this school.

Teacher: Donna

Donna is the Head of Department of Performing Arts at Springvale State High School. This involves drama, dance, music (including instrumental music) and media. She is an experienced teacher with eighteen years of teaching in schools. Donna trained in visual art as her primary area, and drama as her second teaching area. Previously, she had taught visual art and drama but now teaches only drama.

Donna is a confident teacher in the classroom, and exudes a no-nonsense air most of the time. However, she has a fun side that makes her appealing and approachable to students, observed in light-hearted exchanges between teacher and students. Perhaps Donna's sometimes business-like disposition can be attributed to the hectic nature of her role where she seems to be constantly pulled in all directions, and needed by various people simultaneously. However, her love for educating young people and the arts was clearly obvious during my interviews with her.

3. **All Saints College**

All Saints is a Christian co-educational college that caters to years 1 – 12 (six to seventeen years old). It also has boarding facilities. Situated in a suburb, the college is sprawling and consists of 21 hectares of land. The college caters mainly for middle to upper class students, and has quite a large percentage of foreign students. There are over 55 cultural groups represented at the college. The college is known for its high academic standards and offers a reasonable amount of scholarships each year. It used to be very selective in its enrolment but has relaxed recently, inviting anyone who can afford the fees to apply. All Saints feels less like an institution because of its large grounds which allows buildings to be built low-rise, and fairly spread out. A large chapel is situated on the school grounds. There is also a lot of greenery and nature around, making it feel like a school in the park.

Teacher: Karen

Karen is Head of Department of Performing Arts at All Saints College. This encompasses curriculum music and drama. Besides the senior school, she also oversees the junior school and her role thus extends from students years 1 – 12. Karen has a background and training in drama, and drama in education. She was involved with young people's theatre where she discovered her love for working with this age group, before becoming a teacher about ten years ago. Her love for working with young people leads her to be heavily involved in the

wider drama in education community, where she contributes regularly at state conferences and workshops. She also constantly involves herself, and her students in arts projects outside the school setting, where they can be part of a larger artistic community.

Karen is a warm and caring teacher, and well-liked and respected by her students. She is a confident and effective teacher in the classroom, and relates well to the students. On top of good practice, Karen is also familiar and conversant in drama, and drama in education theory. She keeps up-to-date with current research and is reflexive of her own practice. Karen has strong beliefs in the role of education, and an aesthetic education, which leads her to take her role very seriously. This involves not only being responsible for providing an empowering educational experience for her students, but also empowering the role of the arts in education and society by being a good role model and strong advocate.

Other people interviewed include:

4. **Dr. Brad Haseman**, Coordinator, Postgraduate Education and Research Training, Creative Industries Research and Applications Center, Queensland University of Technology
5. **Madonna Stinson**, Project Officer (The Arts), Queensland School Curriculum Council

6. **Adrienne Jones**, Head of Review Panel (Drama), Queensland Board of Senior Secondary School Studies, and Education Liaison Officer (Secondary), Queensland Arts Council

Other research participants that were interviewed but not listed above may be found in the full list of research participants at Appendix B: 6. They are listed to acknowledge their contribution to the shaping of the research.

Singapore

The fieldwork in Singapore allowed me to observe and record drama in education practice in the classroom, as well as gain a better understanding of the different dimensions in the school setting that impact upon drama in the curriculum²⁷.

I chose one primary, and one secondary school as my research settings so as to be able to observe a range of curriculum and teaching styles. Both schools were public schools and part of TNS' drama in education program, *Development Through Drama* for more than a year. The duration of the program in the schools was an important factor as

²⁷ The fieldwork was mostly confined to drama in education programs conducted by TNS as this afforded me easier access to research settings and participants since I was the manager of the company's school programs. Furthermore, one of the purposes of the fieldwork was to give me an opportunity to consolidate and study previous drama in education experiences gained through the company's programs. Findings from the overall study could then be implemented to improve on our drama in education programs which currently face numerous challenges. Another reason why the fieldwork in Singapore was confined largely to TNS' drama in education programs was that schools who incorporated drama into their curriculum usually hired artists to conduct the program. It was therefore difficult for me to observe the program of another theatre company as we are competitors in the same market.

teething problems new programs present, as well as later challenges that emerged could be studied. This provided more meaningful data.

I had also hoped as part of the fieldwork to study a drama in education program in a school that was conducted by a teacher. I knew finding such a setting would be difficult as to my knowledge at that time, there were no schools in Singapore that fit this criteria. The few schools that had drama in education usually integrated it into another subject, and the use of drama was not consistent. I was however fortunate to come across an ideal setting during the fieldwork, and I discovered that I knew the drama teacher at the school. It also happened that the school had simultaneously been in touch with TNS to explore a working relationship. Therefore, access to this setting was gained through a work and research context.

The research settings and participants in Singapore were:

1. **Mayflower Primary School**

Mayflower is a public funded school, located in a residential area. It is co-educational and caters to students from Primary 1 – 6 (seven to twelve years old). The school recently re-located to a new and bigger premises in the same locale, as part of the Ministry of Education's PRIME (Program for Rebuilding and Improving Existing Schools) plan²⁸. The school is also unique because it is located within a park. Although the school premises are large, they are not

²⁸ This scheme provides schools with larger classrooms, latest facilities, and technological possibilities. Mayflower was the first school to be re-opened under PRIME and underwent an elaborate dinner celebration that featured a school musical, and saw the Deputy Prime Minister as the Guest-of-Honor.

comparable to Brisbane as land is scarce in Singapore. Therefore, school buildings are high-rise and built close together. They are also concrete and officious looking.

Mayflower Primary has earned itself a good reputation in education, and is a popular school in its neighborhood. It is known for its enrichment programs that are non-curricular subjects conducted during curriculum time²⁹. These programs focus on developing students' multiple intelligences and are offered at every level of schooling. The school has also earned itself a reputation for promoting the Arts, and has been awarded due recognition by the Ministry of Education. Most of the students come from the residential areas surrounding the school, and are from families in the lower socio-economic group. They come from a mix of cultural backgrounds although most of the students are Chinese.

Artist: Ruth

Ruth is a freelance artist who has been involved in theatre in Singapore for more than ten years. Her experiences include both performing using multi-disciplinary art forms, as well as arts education. Ruth's background and training in drama in education includes a diploma in Speech and Drama, and numerous years of experience conducting drama programs in schools. Besides being contracted to conduct *Development Through Drama* with TNS, Ruth also works with other theatre companies, and commercial companies who use drama in

²⁹ Mayflower Primary is the pioneering school for TNS' *Development Through Drama* program, where it has been conducted for the past three years; albeit with a different cohort of students each year.

learning in schools. She also teaches drama part-time at a few tertiary institutions in Singapore, and continues to perform for the stage.

Ruth is a firm yet fun-loving teacher in the classroom. The students respect her and are keen to get her approval. They enjoy drama lessons with enthusiasm, and energy-levels are high in every class. Ruth is a confident and effective teacher. She understands her students well, and is able to remember the name of every student even though she teaches about two hundred students at Mayflower Primary School, for only an hour a week. Her love for teaching children is apparent in the classroom, and she feels responsible for providing them with empowering educational experiences. Her practice demonstrates innovative curriculum and different strategies and approaches in the classroom. She also spends additional effort on students with behavioral problems. Ruth is an advocate for arts education and has been canvassing support for aesthetic education in schools. She is currently looking into setting up an association for drama in education in Singapore.

2. Orchid Secondary School

Orchid Secondary, like Mayflower Primary, is a public funded school. It caters for students from Secondary 1 – 4 (thirteen to sixteen year olds), and like most other secondary schools, allows students who are slower learners to do another year of schooling before sitting for their exit exams. The school is located within a residential area with most of the students coming from that locale. The

school building looks like most other schools in Singapore – high-rise, compact and concrete. It is co-educational and features a mix of students from the different cultural groups in Singapore although most of the students are either Chinese or Malay. Students at the school are from the lower to middle socio-economic groups.

Orchid Secondary is an average school. Its students were once notorious and were known to have many discipline problems. Its image has improved over the years but students with discipline problems, or problems with the law are not rare in the school. This makes teaching in the school sometimes challenging. Orchid Secondary aims to be value-added³⁰ by 2003. The school recently underwent a change in management with a new Principal. This has brought changes to the psyche of the school which has become more disciplinarian, and academically oriented.

Artists: The artists at this school conducting the *Development Through Drama* program by TNS were not studied in-depth for the fieldwork as the program underwent a change in artists two-thirds into the program. An in-depth study was not thought useful since they were relatively unfamiliar with the setting, students and drama program. However, observations on classroom practice took place, and judgments were made in context.

³⁰ A value-added school is a term constructed by the Ministry of Education. It is given to schools who manage to consistently raise the academic standards of their students. This is shown in the overall leaving school examination results after they are compared to the results of the students when they first entered the school. Value-added schools gain a better reputation, and more funding from the Ministry of Education.

3. Merlion Secondary School

Merlion Secondary is a public school in a residential area. It is a co-educational school catering for students from Secondary 1 – 4 (thirteen to sixteen years old). Like Orchid Secondary, students with learning difficulties are allowed an additional year of schooling. Previously an average school, it has in the past few years raised its academic standards, and now offers a range of enrichment programs and learning experiences outside the core curriculum. On top of these programs, drama and dance are niche areas in the school. This means that these two art forms have been identified for further development, and will be used by Merlion Secondary to set itself apart from other schools through attaining a high standard in these areas.

Merlion Secondary was ranked one of the top twenty secondary schools in Singapore in 2000. The progress of the school has earned itself an Autonomous³¹ status in education which has in turn, contributed to its prestige. The increase in funding accompanying the accolade allows the school to continue to provide unique and innovative learning opportunities for its students. This is reflected in the school surroundings. While the school looks similar to most other school structures in Singapore externally, internally it boasts landscape architecture, a butterfly sanctuary, and facilities for aquaponics. It also has facilities for the Arts, such as studios for music, dance

³¹ This was a term constructed by the Ministry of Education in 1994. It is given to schools who have consistently managed to achieve good academic and non-academic results. The school also has to be well-established and gained parental and public support and recognition. Schools with this status are given more autonomy to make decisions apart from the Ministry of Education. They are also equipped with better facilities, and are given more funding.

and drama. Artworks are also displayed around the school, lending color and a vibrancy to the school environment. Information technology is also a priority at Merlion Secondary, and every student has a personal workspace on the computer network. This allows lessons to take place online, on top of classroom learning.

Students at Merlion Secondary are from all parts of the island, and come from a mixture of lower to middle socio-economic groups. They are also culturally diverse although the majority of students are Chinese. Students' academic standards are higher than the national average and need to be in order to qualify for the school. They are also specially trained by the school to participate in Mathematics Olympiads, IT competitions and research on the environment and life sciences. Students at this school tend to be generally well-behaved and have a genuine interest in learning. This makes teaching easier and a more enjoyable experience at this school.

Teacher: Jessie

Jessie is a full-time drama teacher at Merlion Secondary School. Her teaching load also includes English, and she is in charge of the school's Drama Club. Jessie is formally trained in drama pedagogy and joined Merlion Secondary in 2000. As a new teacher, she has already convinced the school to incorporate drama into the curriculum, and led the Drama Club to win first place in a national drama competition for schools. She was recently tasked to develop

drama as a niche area in the school, and to look into the possibility of offering drama as an elective subject students can take for their leaving school examinations. Jessie is an advocate for drama in education and can be found presenting at national conferences and workshops.

Jessie is an energetic and fun teacher in the classroom. She is entertaining to watch and her students draw on her positive energy in the classroom. It is obvious they like her and enjoy drama tremendously. Jessie understands the age-group of her students well, and is able to pitch activities and lessons that will benefit them. She relates very well with them, and use their 'lingo'. Her grasp of drama practice in the classroom is very strong, and her lessons are impactful. Jessie believes that drama in education offers students empowering experiences and she aims to provide them with an aesthetic education, and to help them find their 'voice'. She sees herself as a nurturer, and strives to help students develop a love for learning.

Other people interviewed include:

4. **Ms Ngeow Ah Cheng**, Principal, Mayflower Primary School
5. **English Head of Department**, Orchid Secondary School
6. **Dr. Stephen Hazell**, Head of Department, Literature and Drama, National Institute of Education

Role as Researcher

During the study, I viewed my role as researcher as a precious and privileged one. I realized how busy teachers are and appreciated the amount of time they spared for me. They were also gracious to allow me to observe their classroom practice, knowing that I would be making judgments. This generosity was even more apparent where I was a stranger to the teachers in Brisbane.

Eisner views the researcher in an educational setting as a connoisseur. He states that, 'connoisseurship is the art of appreciation', and is 'the ability to make fine-grained discriminations among complex and subtle qualities' (Eisner, 1991: 63). That is, the researcher as connoisseur needs a thorough understanding of the educational setting one is in, with all its intricacies and complexities. The five dimensions in the 'ecology of schooling' acted as starting points for me, the researcher to act as the connoisseur. I have tried to live up to the expectations of a connoisseur while conducting the fieldwork. However, there were moments of self-doubt as I wondered if my lack of formal training in drama pedagogy was a liability. Most of my knowledge of drama in education practice in schools comes from working experience, and from the literature reviewed for the study. I hoped this would be sufficient for me to make valid judgments, and as Ely states, 'to rely on ourselves as the primary research tool' (Ely, 1991:108).

Ely (1991: 44 – 45) states that there are two types of observers when conducting the fieldwork, the ‘limited observer’ and the ‘privileged observer’³². I had the experience of filling both roles while conducting the fieldwork for this study; being a limited observer in the research settings in Brisbane, and a privileged observer in Singapore. Both roles had their merits and pitfalls.

As a limited observer in Brisbane, I had to rely on my supervisor to recommend appropriate research settings as I was unfamiliar with schools in this country. It also took time to familiarize myself with the education system, and schooling structures in Queensland. I had to build trust with the research participants, and had to rely heavily on their goodwill and schedule to accommodate the fieldwork. This meant that there were sometimes gaps between classroom observations. Some of the teachers were also difficult to get hold of, and I had to wait for them to get in touch with me. The merits of this role was that I was seen solely as a researcher. Therefore, research participants did not doubt my sincerity, and knew that the fieldwork was conducted in the name of research. Being a stranger and foreigner, perhaps they were more willing to confide in me as my contact, and relationship with them and the wider community would be limited. Being unfamiliar with schooling in Brisbane also allowed me to see everything with ‘new eyes’ and to make fewer assumptions.

Being the manager of TNS’ school programs meant that I was able to be a privileged observer in Singapore. I was familiar with the artists conducting the program, as well

³² The limited observer observes, asks questions, and builds trust with the research participants over time. He or she does not have a public role other than that of a researcher. The privileged observer, on the other hand is someone who is known and trusted by the research participants, and therefore given easy access to the research setting and information required.

as the research settings. This familiarity gave me easy access to information, and the setting, and I reaped the benefits of existing trust with the research participants. I also had more control over the scheduling of classroom observations. Being a privileged observer also meant I knew the nuances and background information on the settings and participants. This sometimes enabled me to make more informed judgments on data. It also gave me the confidence to make claims as compared to Brisbane where the limited time spent in the setting, and with the participants made me cautious of making claims³³.

However, being a privileged observer meant that I had to be more cautious and self-reflexive when making judgments on data in Singapore. This was to ensure that I was not being biased from making too many assumptions by being overly familiar with the setting and participants. Ely (1991: 17) states that, 'it seems that it is increasingly important to study the familiar, but without the blinders that familiarity often attaches to us'. I had to remind myself to remove those blinders when conducting the fieldwork. Furthermore, being a privileged observer meant that I had more responsibility towards maintaining existing trust with the research participants. I had to be careful about how to represent them and the research settings in the study, in order to not offend anyone and affect our working relationship. It is also acknowledged that while being familiar to the participants might have enabled them to trust me more, our work-based relationship might have made some of them wary when sharing information even though the context was research-based.

³³ It was especially difficult for me to report on negative classroom practice in Brisbane as I felt perhaps I had not immersed myself enough in the setting. This was compared to Singapore where I had contact with the research settings, participants and drama program for at least a year, and more.

Another challenge that I faced being a privileged observer was distinguishing between the two hats I was wearing while conducting the fieldwork. Ely (1991: 52) cautions that 'qualitative researchers need to remind themselves that their job is to describe, not fix, not judge'. I found this difficult at times and felt that as manager of the drama in education program, I was responsible for improving the program. There were numerous times I was tempted to intervene in the program in order to improve practice, and was frustrated with not being able to immediately implement in the classroom what I had learnt in Brisbane. In situations where I had to intervene as manager, I was clear on the consequences of my actions, and noted them in context. I drew comfort from Ely's statement (ibid: 24) that 'most people learn to walk the fine line between "contributing" and "researching" that serves both the research process and the social unit being studied'.

Besides the researcher being a connoisseur, he or she also needs to be a critic whose aim is to disclose (Eisner, 1991:85). Eisner terms criticism as 'the art of disclosure' where the primary function of the critic is educational. This means 'providing the material through which perception is increased and understanding deepened' (ibid: 85). It involved a process of data analysis, and together with the literature reviewed, providing conclusions to the aims of the study.

As a critic, I was faced with the enormity of the task behind analyzing the data collected. It was daunting at first, and I hoped that I would be clear-headed enough to pull all the data together to create useful findings. The same self-doubts I had while filling the role of connoisseur due to the lack of formal training in drama in education

came back as I wondered whether I would find anything really worthwhile, or ground-breaking to say about the data collected. At some points I was affected emotionally as the amount of work and relatively short period of time I had to write the study due to work commitments got the better of me. Being isolated from loved ones, and in a foreign country were also contributing factors. Furthermore, being away from the field made it easier to forget the motivating factors for the research, and I often felt anxious to return to work and implement what I had learnt, and the significant practices observed.

However, I persisted, reminding myself of the larger role a critic plays in contributing towards overall research in the field, and the responsibility I had to the drama in education community in Singapore where dialogue and discussion on arts education is scarce.

Methods of Data Collection

Ethnography was the research strategy adopted for the fieldwork. This involved observing drama practice in the classroom in the research settings, as well as interviewing participants on the different dimensions of drama in education based on ‘the ecology of schooling’. It also involved studying any relevant material on the research settings and participants for a better understanding of their attitudes and practices.

Field Log

The log contains data upon which the analysis is begun and carried forward. It is the home for the substance that we use to tease out meanings and reflect upon them as they evolve. The log is the place where each qualitative researcher faces the self as instrument through a personal dialogue about moments of victory and disheartenment, hunches, feelings, insights, assumptions, biases, and ongoing ideas about method.

(Ely, 1991:69)

I first came across the idea of a field log while reading Ely's work on qualitative research. My impression of it was like a diary except done with more rigor and description. I realized the importance of the log in recording my thoughts and feelings as the study commenced in order to document the research process. It also made me more self-aware and conscious of what I was thinking and feeling. Moreover, the research process was of a significant amount of time and it was impossible to commit everything to memory. Classroom observations were recorded in the log contributing to data collection being an organized and systematic process. This helped the analytic task later. Furthermore, the recordings enabled me to reflect on the research process later on in the study while analyzing data. This helped in the examination of bias, and ensured events were remembered correctly. I was also reminded of the context an observation was made³⁴.

However, there were some initial challenges in using the field log. I grappled with how much to write in the log in order for it to be useful. I was also unsure how much description was necessary from the classroom observations when doing the log entries. It took me time to get used to writing in the descriptive before making judgments

³⁴ Samples of field log entries can be found at Appendix B: 12.

during classroom observations. However, adhering to this process forced me to distinguish between what I saw, and what I thought and felt. This allowed a clearer analysis later, and to reveal decision-making processes to the reader by giving examples when reporting the study.

Interviews

Interviews are at the heart of doing ethnography because they seek the words of the people we are studying, the richer the better, so that we can understand their situations with increasing clarity.

(Ely, 1991: 58)

The interviews conducted with the research participants were crucial to the study. They allowed me to gain a more in-depth understanding of drama in education practices in schools in areas that extended beyond classroom practice. The interviews also provided opportunities to probe the thoughts and feelings of research participants which were not as transparent when observing practice. As well, it enabled me to clarify events witnessed in the classroom.

As an ethnographic interviewer, preparing for the interview included drafting a series of questions beforehand. This was done using the broad questions identified in each of the dimensions in 'the ecology of schooling' as a guide to develop more detailed and relevant questions. Questions were tailored according to the research participant, and aims of the interview. However, the nature of these questions often changed and had to be adapted during the interview itself to accommodate the natural progression and flow of the interview, gauged by the interviewee's responses. This tested my ability to be

flexible, and the familiarity with the objectives of the interview and questions I had prepared. Improvisation often had to be done on the spot, and an openness required to treat all responses as potentially significant, and not censoring them for fear of irrelevance. Judgment also had to be suspended and a conscious effort made not to condone or condemn any responses to prevent influencing, and causing biased responses.

School and Program Documents

In addition to classroom observations and interviews, relevant school and drama program documents were examined to provide more clues to the investigative process of the fieldwork. These included school yearbooks, prospectus and other material on school philosophy and psyche. It involved studying drama curriculum and lesson plans. In Singapore, this process included going through minutes taken of previous meetings pertaining to TNS' drama in education program. All these documents contributed towards the collection of rich and meaningful data.

Data Analysis

To analyze is to find some way or ways to tease out what we consider to be essential meaning in the raw data; to reduce and reorganize and combine so that the readers share the researcher's findings in the most economical, interesting fashion. The product of analysis is a creation that speaks to the heart of what was learned.

(Ely, 1991: 140)

Analyzing the data collected from the fieldwork was an exciting and suspenseful experience. Although the data was tossed around my mind throughout the fieldwork, it was refreshing and exciting to view the data again and in its entirety, similar to piecing together a jigsaw puzzle. It was also suspenseful as I was unsure what the final findings would look like, and whether I was able to contribute anything significant to furthering research in drama in education.

The data analysis from the fieldwork involved combing through the field log entries, interviews, and school and drama program documents to familiarize myself with the data. Findings were sieved through and decisions made on which of the five dimensions in 'the ecology of schooling' would data be most appropriately categorized. A system of identification for each dimension was created and used to organize the findings. This was done for each research setting and participant, and in each country. Findings in each of the dimensions were then recorded separately, and examined in more detail to identify patterns in the data, such as similarities, or data that correlated or had causal effects. These further findings were then grouped together and given another sub-category and heading within each dimension. This process was repeated for the data collected in each country. Finally, an analysis of data across countries in each dimension, across dimensions, and in relation to the literature review was conducted to produce the overall findings and conclusions made in the study.

Analysis leads naturally to interpretation and issues relating to generalization are raised. Eisner (1991: 203) terms generalization as, 'the use of the particular to say something about the general' and also calls it, 'the concrete universal'. 'The concrete

universal is regarded as a true rendering of universal features through “exemplification” (ibid). There are two uses to generalization; it performs an anticipatory and retrospective function (Eisner, 1991: 205). The former allows us to use our generalization to think about, and shape our future to which the generalization is relevant while the latter involves using our findings not to anticipate the future, but ‘by encountering or formulating an idea that allows us to see our past experience in a new light’ (ibid: 205). However, this retrospective generalization can then also perform an anticipatory function.

Both types of generalization have been employed in this study. Retrospective generalization applies to the study in Singapore where previous experiences in drama in education were considered and used in the data analysis. The overall findings of this study were then used to make generalizations about the future, mainly recommendations for drama in education for Singapore. The contexts for these generalizations however, have been specified and need to be considered when studying the conclusions made.

It is acknowledged that data analysis and interpretation for this study took place through particular paradigms; namely, the aesthetic, critical pedagogy and constructivism. This means recognizing that generalizations made from the study are not truths per se and could be different if made through the lens of different paradigms. However, as Eisner states,

The conditional quality of educational life, its high degree of context specificity, is formidable. What this means for practice and for the uses of research is that in most settings generalizations derived from research are not likely to be taken as gospel. We offer considerations to be shared and discussed, reflected upon, and debated Their generalizing qualities are not so much located in Truth, as in their ability to refine perception and to deepen conversation.

(Eisner, 1991: 204)

Therefore, the generalizations from this study are truths that contribute towards creating dialogue and discussion, and further research on drama in education in Singapore.

Establishing Credibility

As researcher, I took several steps to ensure findings reported were credible. This involved acknowledging the limits of being a connoisseur and critic, and trying to reduce these limitations as far as possible.

Ely states that as ethnographic observer, ‘... even at our most unintrusive, we influence the very phenomenon we are studying’ (Ely, 1991: 47). Thus, as a connoisseur in the classroom, I was aware of the impact I had on the setting observed, and tried to reduce any unwanted consequences as much as possible. This involved trying to be as inconspicuous in the classroom, and reacting neutrally to events in the classroom to prevent influencing responses. Furthermore, Ely quotes Levine as saying that, ‘we will never be entirely free of our own preferred ways of viewing situations and our own biases. We can, however, be more self-aware’ (Levine in Ely, 1991: 54). I attempted to be self-reflexive while conducting the fieldwork and reminded myself to make clear

distinctions in describing observations, and making judgments. Judgments were also made cautiously and steps were taken to ensure that behaviors observed in the classroom were consistent. This involved switching classes observed in one of the settings to ensure teacher practice was consistent across classes.

Steps were also taken as critic to contribute to the credibility of the study. This surfaced ethical issues in research methodology. Ely (1991: 225) mentions that we are being ethical when we strive to be faithful to another's viewpoint, when we strive to maintain confidentiality, and when we strive to be trustworthy. It is important to be ethical for the integrity of the research itself, for the participants whom we work with, and for the broader social implications of qualitative research.

In this study, I strove to be ethical by keeping all my sources of data anonymous except when they have requested otherwise. All transcripts of interviews were given to the various sources for member checking. As well, I attempted to be trustworthy through achieving the triangulation on data collected; through observations and interpretations that have been reinforced through interviews and literature reviewed, and vice versa. Direct quotations from research participants have been included in the reporting of findings, as well as extracts from field log entries to allow the data to speak for itself. Furthermore, where there were negative cases, or 'evidence that does not fit into our emergent findings' (ibid: 98), I have included them in the study.

Other steps I took as critic to establish credibility for the study included being reflexive and reflective when analyzing data, and reporting on the research. This acknowledged

my transactive state as researcher, and the impossibility of re-creating the field when reporting on the study. Eisner (1991: 86) exemplifies the latter point when he states, ‘with no rules of equivalence, there is no one-to-one correspondence of referent to symbol. Thus every criticism is a reconstruction’. Thus, steps were taken to bring the ‘public spotlight’ on my decision-making processes when making judgments in the reporting of the study (Ely, 1991: 156). Hopefully, this allows readers to decide for themselves whether claims made were valid.

Reporting on Data

Data from the fieldwork, and interpretations made will be reported in the following three chapters of the study. Data is reported against the five dimensions in ‘the ecology of schooling’ – the Intentional, Structural, Curricular, Pedagogical and Evaluative dimensions in chapters four and five, allowing for a clearer and more organized reading of the findings.

Findings from Brisbane in Queensland, Australia will be reported first in the proceeding chapter, followed by findings from Singapore in chapter five. Finally, the last chapter of the study will report on interpretations, and conclusions made from the fieldwork in both countries, as well as the literature review³⁵. This concluding chapter will also include recommendations for the continuing development of drama in education in Singapore, thus echoing Ely’s sentiment, ‘in “doing” qualitative research

³⁵ Findings from the five dimensions will be synthesized across dimensions and countries, and will therefore be organized under broader headings.

we enact what we value. In reflecting upon that, we better understand our commitments. With awareness, we can act again as we see the need' (Ely, 1991: 232).

The study now turns to the reporting of findings from the fieldwork conducted.

LOOKING FOR SIGNIFICANT PRACTICE IN QUEENSLAND

This chapter is interested in conveying findings of significant drama in education practice found in the course of research in Brisbane, Queensland, Australia. It is also interested in providing an analysis of what these findings mean in light of the importance of an aesthetic education and its outcomes.

Findings from the fieldwork will be reported against the dimensions identified earlier for an aesthetic education to take place – the Intentional, Structural, Curricular, Pedagogical and Evaluative dimensions. The chapter will end with conclusions, and outline some challenges for the future.

The Intentional Dimension

The Intentional Dimension is concerned with the aims and goals formulated for the school and classroom. This study investigated the macro aims of education reflected in the policy document, *2010 Queensland State Education* (2000)³⁶, as well as the aims of education in the three research settings: Blessed Heart College; Springvale State High School; and All Saints College. Findings from the research settings revealed aims with a common focal point: empowering the student.

³⁶ Key points extracted from *2010* can be found at Appendix B: 7.

Aims of Drama In Education

All three schools studied during the fieldwork recognized the role drama played in empowering students. These schools positioned students at the center of their philosophy with aims that fell into three main categories³⁷: recognizing students as individuals and developing their individual potentials, providing a holistic education, and thirdly, critical education for all students.

Drama provides students with opportunities to explore and challenge their individual values, perceptions and qualities through an aesthetic education. It facilitates the personal development of each student, looking at 'how (they got) to this point and what are the kind of people they would like to be' (Karen, Appendix A: 3, lines 94 - 97). Drama is also able to identify and develop the different intelligences in students through its all-encompassing form and flexible content.

Incorporating drama into the curriculum enables schools to provide a holistic education for students. One of the aims of Blessed Heart College gleaned from the college prospectus states: 'The College is concerned with affective, intellectual, social, cultural, religious and physical development' (College prospectus, 2001).

Drama also provides a critical education for students where schools aim to encourage independent and critical thinking, and conformity for its own sake is discouraged. This was found in Springvale State High School's aim 'to develop confident, self-directed

³⁷ A more detailed description of these aims can be found at Appendix B: 8.

knowledgeable people who think creatively and critically and are equipped to participate in society's decision making process' (College prospectus, 2000). Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) explains that even though drama is an artistic discipline, 'we are always analyzing, or criticizing or (looking) at a world issue' (Appendix A: 2, lines 106 - 107).

The Structural Dimension

This dimension looks at the formal structures that are in place for drama in education to succeed. The findings fall into two main categories – support of key people in the school and community, and physical resources.

The most important determinant was the role of the Principal as a factor for the success of the arts in schools. Research found that staff and administrative support contributed toward the well-being of drama within the school. Support from parents was also crucial and influenced enrolment numbers and the quality of programs. The findings show that teachers drew moral, and tangible support for their practice from the wider professional community. Furthermore, the wider education system supported drama in schools by providing a supply of professionally trained teachers.

The physical structures identified contributing toward drama in education's success in schools included the factors of space and time. They affected the amount, and level of aesthetic learning that occurred during drama.

Support from the Principal

The Principal's support for drama determines the success of the subject in a school³⁸.

Fieldwork conducted in Brisbane found that support from the Principal could be intangible or philosophical, as well as tangible. While tangible support is more easily observed, intangible support is just as important. Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) described her relationship with her principal as 'positive' and this impacts upon the quality of arts programs being offered; leading to high enrolment numbers (Appendix A: 2, lines 477 – 479 & 507 - 510). Karen (HOD, All Saints College) appreciates that her Principal understands the intrinsic worth of drama in education, and feels supported in 'a school environment which appreciates excellence in the arts beyond the performance outcomes' (Appendix A: 3, lines 692 - 693). She is relieved that she is not pressured to present classroom work or performances to parents or the wider community for the sake of a showcase.

The forms of tangible support from a Principal excavated from the fieldwork included hiring specialist drama teachers for the school, as is the case at Blessed Heart College. At All Saints College, Karen (HOD, All Saints College) receives tangible support such as: having access to ten hours of teaching-aid a week; time-tabling support; relief for

³⁸ A study conducted by Haseman (1990) looked at the status of drama in education in Queensland schools and found that the first few years of having drama in a school were crucial for winning the Principal's support, and establishing a status for the subject. Furthermore, negative student attitudes towards drama seemed to be more widely felt when there was poor support from the Principal for the subject. Findings from the different studies conducted in the *Champions of Change* (1999) from USA discussed earlier in the Literature Review also listed the support of the Principal as a factor contributing towards the success of arts programs in schools.

the extra duties she is involved in professionally; and acknowledgement of co-curricular involvement by receiving an honorarium. As well, her department is able to purchase good technical equipment and afford a good resource library. Furthermore, drama receives a 'generous recurrent budget' (Appendix A: 3, line 410). Karen shared that with \$5,000 allocated to a senior performance, she is able to employ artists-in-residence for her students, 'which is fantastic and provides the seniors with the opportunity to have a very real industry performance experience in Year 12' (lines 414 - 418).

Finally, the fieldwork revealed that while the Principal's support seemed unconditional, gaining recognition from external bodies for the school's drama program was significant. Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) stated:

... and the fact that we are showcasing the school so much, for example, we are doing three performances in three different venues for Education Week – dance, drama and music; things like that the Principal recognizes, and when the thank-you letters come from Arts Queensland, or the Premier, or other areas in the government, that also helps.

(Appendix A: 2, lines 481 - 486)

Thus, recognition of a school's contribution to the wider community through the arts help to reinforce positive support for arts subjects in the curriculum.

Support from Staff and Administration

Beyond the principal's support, support of the other teaching staff and administration is important in realizing an aesthetic education³⁹.

The study in Brisbane found that the non-drama staff and administrators were generally supportive of drama in the research settings. For example, they would lend their support for drama co-curricular activities such as school plays and musicals by volunteering to help with the production elements. Other forms of support would be in the form of attendance at drama events organized by the schools. However, support sometimes had to be earned.

Jenny (Specialist Drama Teacher, Blessed Heart College) related the experience of having to re-educate the staff and particularly, administration about what drama in education entailed in order to gain their support for the program. The staff at this college had a product-oriented, performance-based understanding of what drama was and she had 'to re-educate them to not do (an annual) concert but that we were actually doing classroom presentations' (Appendix A: 1, lines 383 - 385). This process of re-education helped to ensure the objectives of the drama program were not compromised.

³⁹ In a study, *Learning In and Through the Arts* in the *Champions of Change* report, researchers found that school administrators played a central role in ensuring the continuity and depth of provision of arts learning programs in schools which valued the arts. It was the school administrators who 'encouraged teachers to take risks, learn new skills, and broaden their curriculum' (Burton, Horowitz & Abeles, 1999: 40 - 41).

Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) has been trying to widen the support of non-arts teachers for arts subjects at the school, and to forge closer ties amongst the different faculties. This was through encouraging the rest of the teaching staff to get involved in the school musical, demonstrating that ‘we (the Performing Arts Department) are not an isolated team of highly creative aesthetic people who are not willing to let others share and work with us (Appendix A: 2, lines 401 - 402)⁴⁰.

Space

Drama lessons require appropriate spaces to be effective. The fieldwork included observations on the facilities for drama in the research settings, and a description of the various spaces was noted. Findings derived that facilities for drama were most suitable at All Saints College, and least ideal at Blessed Heart College⁴¹.

Findings from the fieldwork included the contribution an evocative classroom environment made to the learning process. Efforts were made at All Saints College for the drama classroom to be inviting for learning through drama. The design material and photographs of drama productions, articles, and student work on the walls of the classroom served to remind students of the aesthetic learning that took place in the room. Furthermore, the college was in the process of converting a double classroom into a studio space with lighting bars, curtains and technological possibilities, thereby enhancing students’ artistic experiences further.

⁴⁰ Although response at the time of the interview was quite poor with only five or six staff out of eighty-seven stepping forward to lend their support, Donna nevertheless thought it was a positive start.

⁴¹ A description of these two spaces taken from field log entries can be found at Appendix B: 12, pg. 25 lines 16 – 26 & pg. 21, lines 22 – 32.

Similarly, at Springvale State High School, drama lessons took place in an auditorium, on a proscenium stage; a potent symbol for drama. On the other hand, the lack of a space devoted solely to drama at Blessed Heart College had led to unmarked spaces for drama. There were no clues or symbols in the rooms where drama was conducted to denote to students they were learning aesthetically, or to stimulate their imagination.

Efforts were underway at both Springvale State High School and All Saints College to build a Performing Arts building at the schools. This would provide better facilities for the arts, as well as house all the art forms in the school under one roof. Presently, faculty and rooms for different art forms were located at different parts of the school which made communication and collaboration challenging. Both Donna and Karen, the respective Heads of Department for the Performing Arts at these two schools welcomed the new facility and were encouraged by the structural support they were receiving for the arts.

Time

Apart from space being a physical resource necessary for the success of drama in education, time was found to be another important variable. The fieldwork revealed that careful time-tabling was important for an effective lesson. Furthermore, a sufficient amount of time needed to be allocated for aesthetic learning to occur. Besides the importance of time in relation to student learning, it was found that the amount of time teachers had to plan and reflect affected the quality of lessons. The quality of

teaching was also influenced by the amount of continuous time teachers experienced with a similar cohort of students.

The amount of time devoted to drama, and the amount of time per period in the research settings observed differed⁴². Students at Springvale State High School experienced 210 minutes of drama a week at the senior level. This translated into two double periods of 35 minutes each, and two single periods a week⁴³. At Blessed Heart College, periods were in blocks of 45 minutes. Students in years 5 and 6 had a period of drama a week, while the year 7's had double that amount. Jenny (Specialist Drama Teacher, Blessed Heart College) stated that this was 'fantastic because they are the kids which have a lot of skills under their belt' (Appendix A: 1, lines 135 - 136). However, it was noted that even with a 45 minute lesson, both lessons I observed seemed to run out of time very quickly, with evaluation taking place the following week. This was not ideal for effective aesthetic learning as students might have forgotten their experiences in the classroom by then, thereby hampering the meaning making process.

Another finding relating to time is the issue of continuity. Jenny (Specialist Drama Teacher, Blessed Heart College) had taken the year 6 class I observed since the students were in Year 5. She was able to bring examples from their previous work into current lessons, and the students have relevant experiences to draw from and make

⁴² *The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus* recommends a minimum of 100 hours a year for learning in the five art forms for the first seven years of schooling. Students may chose to specialize in an art form(s) from years 8 to 10 where a minimum of 180 hours per art form is recommended (Queensland School Curriculum Council, 2001: 22). The *Drama Senior Syllabus* recommends at least 110 hours of learning a year (Queensland Board of Senior Secondary School Studies, 2000: 12).

⁴³ This applied to the mainstream drama students as opposed to students in the extended drama class. The latter consisted of 14 auditioned students who were pursuing drama as a vocation. These students experienced double the amount of drama lessons a week, totaling 420 minutes per week.

comparisons to. At Springvale, Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) mentioned why this continuity was important:

So I take them on a journey, from Year 10 to 11 to 12, and I think that consistency is important to their learning. I think classes that have the same teachers for two years and more is better because you get to know the students more – their histories, their backgrounds, where they want to go, their futures.

(Appendix A: 2, lines 548 - 553)

Besides examining how the facets of time impact upon student learning, the fieldwork also discovered that how teachers spent their time in the settings also influenced student learning in the classroom. In particular, it was found that the heavy workload and responsibilities of a Head of Department, in this case Donna (Springvale State High School), together with the minimal assistance she had affected the amount of time she had to plan and reflect on drama lessons⁴⁴. This could have a detrimental effect on the quality of aesthetic experiences in the drama classroom.

Support from Parents

Interviews conducted with the research participants found parents' support played a role in helping to shape drama at the school⁴⁵. They revealed that parental support could be manifested in a few ways: taking an active interest in the subject; attending

⁴⁴ Donna's role or broad job description can be broken down to teaching, management and administration, in-service and professional development, and extra-curricular activities. A full description of her duties can be found in Appendix A: 2, lines 298 - 312.

⁴⁵ A study commissioned by the Australia Council for the Arts in 2000, titled *Australians and the Arts*, found that the amount of parental support and encouragement a child received in the arts was important in determining whether he/she continued to pursue arts-related activities upon leaving school. This was found to be more significant than whether the child enjoyed his/her arts education experience in school. Consequently, the report recommended that 'the role of formal school-based arts education should be clearly integrated with activities involving the support of parents' (Costantoura, 2000: 90).

drama performances by students; joining a support group or committee; and/or giving moral support.

At All Saints College, parental support played a vital role in whether students chose the subject from junior into senior year. Karen (HOD, All Saints College) stated that they were 'very aware of the fundamentally academic outcomes which are very important' and they were 'really onto you if they are not comfortable with how the students are progressing' (Appendix A: 3, lines 636 - 640). She however viewed such parental interest in the subject as positive.

The three schools studied had parent support groups for the various extra-curricular activities in the arts. Additionally, a support group of parents had been specially set up for the school musical this year at Springvale State High School. Some of these parents also directly contributed their relevant expertise in the production where possible. As well, Jenny (Specialist Drama Teacher, Blessed Heart College) shared that parents would always step forward to help when requested and their support for drama came mainly from their children who discussed it at home in a positive light. She also received moral support from parents when she met them through the reinforcement of the positive experiences their children were having in the classroom.

Trained Drama Teachers

The fieldwork discovered that prospective drama teachers either underwent an undergraduate degree program in drama and education, or drama with a diploma in

teaching. These programs were offered at a few tertiary institutions in Queensland where demand was high. Formal training in drama as well as education ensured that these future teachers would be well-versed in the dramatic form and history, as well as classroom practice and working with young people. This helped to guarantee aesthetic learning experiences in the classroom.

However, the fieldwork also revealed that in-depth training for prospective teachers in drama only applied to teachers who were training to teach Secondary Drama. Teachers at the primary level were generalist teachers who did not have the option of taking drama as a full-fledged subject at the tertiary level. Therefore, their training in drama was not as thorough, and their confidence with the subject weaker. This will prove to be a challenge in light of the new *The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus* as a mandated teaching requirement.

Support from the Professional Community

The study found that being part of a larger professional drama in education community helped educators feel supported in their roles in school. This was a combination of moral support, as well as tangible support such as sharing lesson plans, expertise, resources and classroom experiences.

Karen (HOD, All Saints College) attributed her high levels of energy and ‘professional commitment’ to good role models in the field who take her work seriously (Appendix A: 3, lines 758 -759). This gives her ‘the feeling that you have to take the opportunity

to move forward and will be encouraged to take yourself and your work that seriously' (lines 761 – 763). It is why she is still actively involved in the wider drama in education community, and contributes back to its development.

Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) appreciates and enjoys networking with the wider professional community. She sees it as a form of support; in terms of 'sharing resources and helping each other out', as well as 'positive ways of keeping the enthusiasm and passion going' (Appendix A: 2, lines 683 – 684 & 641 - 643).

The supportive environment in the wider drama in education community was experienced firsthand during the fieldwork at a Queensland Association of Drama in Education (QADIE) conference. An entry in the field log noted the high levels of moral support shown by the participants for each other:

The atmosphere throughout was always full of energy and there were smiles and hugs everywhere. This was obviously a close-knit community where everybody knew at least someone else if not most of the people there. There was real warmth and support in the space and a sense that everyone was in it together.

(field log entry, 2 May 2001)

Furthermore, many teachers were open and giving throughout the conference, as they shared their experiences and significant practice in their schools. Teachers who conducted workshop sessions gave out copies of their work programs, activities, and other material to all the participants at their session to study and use. Contacts made at the conference could be kept and relationships developed for further support in future.

These experiences reinforced the benefits of belonging to a wider drama in education community and the importance of the support structures that emerge.

To end, findings from the structural dimension revealed that philosophical support for drama in education seemed to be forthcoming. Educators understood the benefits of an aesthetic education, and arguments for incorporating drama into the curriculum were unnecessary. It was also found that while tangible support was mostly present, it varied across schools, where physical resources such as time and space provided challenges. The other challenge involved the training of drama teachers at the primary level, especially in light of the new arts syllabus completed this year.

The findings now turn to the curricular dimension.

The Curricular Dimension

The curricular dimension casts the investigative process onto the drama curriculum. It aims to understand how curriculum is planned, and what it encompasses⁴⁶.

Findings in this dimension from the fieldwork included drama curriculum at both primary and secondary levels providing students with an aesthetic education. It also found a collaborative approach towards planning drama curriculum at both the macro levels of the primary and secondary syllabus, as well as the school settings.

⁴⁶ A brief history of drama in education in Queensland extracted from an interview with Dr. Brad Haseman (Coordinator, Postgraduate Education and Research Training, Creative Industries Research and Applications Center, Queensland University of Technology) can be found at Appendix B: 9.

Other findings included a drama curriculum that involved artists teaching, and working with students in the classroom. Students were also involved in co-curricular activities that allowed them to watch, or participate in performances that furthered their learning experiences.

Finally, the fieldwork revealed a challenge for drama curriculum in Queensland in the area of integrating the use of technology. Although *The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus* and the *Drama Senior Syllabus* both acknowledge its role, it was not yet actively integrated into the syllabus. Challenges pertaining to facilities, training and finding a working methodology still needed to be resolved.

An Aesthetic Education

The focus of the primary and secondary drama syllabus in Queensland is on providing an aesthetic education for students. This philosophy trickled down to the micro level of the school although the ability to articulate this mode of learning varied amongst the research participants. In a study conducted by MacDonald (1993) on creating aesthetic learning experiences in the classroom, she found that the teacher's perception of the aesthetic was an important factor in enabling aesthetic learning to occur.

The fieldwork revealed that teachers were experienced in using dramatic conventions and elements, and structured their lessons around the aesthetic fields of *forming*, *presenting* and *responding*. Both Jenny (Specialist Drama Teacher, Blessed Heart College) and Karen (HOD, All Saints College) were also able to articulate what

providing an aesthetic education meant, and entailed. Karen's response, 'linking the intellectual, cognitive to the affective or emotional intelligences' is characteristic of the type of responses received from these two teachers (Appendix A: 3, lines 156 – 157).

Collaborative Planning

The fieldwork conducted found that collaborative planning processes were present at both the macro level of the drama syllabi, as well as the micro level of the schools' work programs.

The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus had an inclusive developmental process and the developers of the syllabus were proud of the fact that many people from diverse organizations contributed to its final outcome, making it well represented⁴⁷. The *Drama Senior Syllabus* was developed by the Drama Sub-Committee at the Queensland Board of Senior Secondary School Studies (Q.B.S.S.S.S), a statutory body responsible for the development of syllabi in the post-compulsory years of schooling. The Drama Sub-Committee consists of teachers and academics, all involved in the field of drama.

⁴⁷ The process involved representatives of three school authorities in Queensland – Education Queensland, The Association of Independent Schools of Queensland Incorporated, and the Queensland Catholic Education Commission. As well, a syllabus advisory committee, a consultative network, parent organizations, unions and professional associations were included in the process. Furthermore, the draft syllabus was trialled by 12 schools, and subsequently piloted by 111 teachers in 36 schools across Queensland (Stinson, 1999: 7).

The collaborative nature of planning drama syllabi at the macro level ensured that curriculum is relevant, and broad-based. A similar style of planning was observed at the micro level of the school in two of the research settings.

Both Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) and Karen (HOD, All Saints College) planned their work programs collaboratively with the rest of the drama staff. They also included students in this process through obtaining feedback on lesson plans and the overall program. Donna shared some of the questions she asked students were if ‘what they did was of value to them?’, and ‘was it meaningful?’ (Appendix A: 2, lines 178 – 180). Student responses were taken into consideration when planning other work programs.

This approach to planning at the micro level of the school ensured that work programs and lesson plans were relevant and interesting to students. Through exchanging ideas and sharing expertise, teachers could provide innovative and meaningful lessons for aesthetic learning in the classroom.

Artists-in-Residence

Fieldwork conducted also found that artists were invited into the school to conduct drama activities that complemented the curriculum. These residencies varied in duration; from one or several days, to several weeks.

Artists-in-residence helped to extend what students learnt in the classroom, and/or provided them with skills their teachers were unable to teach. Karen (HOD, All Saints College) shared that she invited artists to work with her students because she sees them as ‘an enhancement of the curriculum process’ (Appendix A: 3, lines 992 - 993). Therefore, she brings in artists who are not just ‘different versions of me’ but artists who can ‘contribute a level of expertise the students can immediately appreciate’ (lines 993 - 996). Working with artists-in-residence also afforded students opportunities to work with professional artists, thereby exposing them to the wider industry. It also provided them with unique learning experiences or as Karen stated, ‘that lovely integrity you lose in classroom practice’ (lines 1000 - 1001).

Finally, inviting artists into the school contributed towards maintaining the education-industry link where future artists are reached out to join the industry, and in turn, sustain the industry. It also gave artists opportunities to work with young people, and enabled them to ‘appreciate my job more and therefore appreciate the potential of young people and drama in education’ (Karen, Appendix A: 3, lines 1029 - 1031).

Technology

The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus and the *Drama Senior Syllabus* both mention the role of technology. This supports the vision in *2010 Queensland State Education* which recognizes technology as a ‘force for change’ and its role in society (Education Queensland, 2000: 6). However, neither syllabi actively integrates technology into its philosophy or methodology.

Madonna Stinson, curriculum officer for *The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus* stated, (interview, 10 May 2001) that technology is mentioned briefly in the syllabus to ‘recognize its importance as a tool which facilitates the expression and communication of the art rather than a fundamental component of the artform’. There were also implementation issues to consider as not all schools have technological resources. Consequently, highlighting technology as part of the syllabus would make it mandatory which would be problematic for schools lacking the resources.

The fieldwork also unveiled that drama teachers were often not confident in using technology as they were not trained. Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) stated that she is ‘not very comfortable working with a lot of computerized equipment’ although she acknowledged that it is a priority for her to learn more about technology (Appendix A: 2, lines 262 - 266). Karen (HOD, All Saints College) shared that the Performing Arts department has been utilizing the school’s intranet system and other equipment to upload classroom and production experiences to the web for students to access. However, other technological integration would only take place when ‘teachers’ technical confidence grows’ (Appendix A: 3, lines 534 - 535).

Donna acknowledged apprehension about the role technology played in society and is wary of it becoming the main tool in education, for fear of replacing the more sensory aspects of the arts. She stated:

So I'm kind of caught in the middle because I want to do technology more; particularly in lighting and sound effects because we're kind of behind the eight ball at the moment but also wanting to nurture the students that it doesn't all have to be about technology and digital and CD-ROMs and video games and things. That you need to keep in touch with that I call it the human spirit. Like your feelings and those sorts of things, and I think the ultimate would be to have a match with what's happening – new technology and your natural creativity.

(Appendix A: 2, lines 284 - 293)

Therefore, it would appear a balance needs to be found as technology weaves its way into aesthetic learning experiences in the classroom.

Co-Curricular Activities

Besides the drama curriculum, the schools studied for the fieldwork also had co-curricular activities that substantiated the curriculum. These included inviting performances to be staged in school, theatre excursions, and performing to audiences within, and outside the school.

Students at Blessed Heart College had opportunities to watch performances staged at their school by professional artists⁴⁸. These performances were beneficial as they extended drama work that was happening in the classroom. It also provided students with opportunities to watch a professional drama production. Additionally, performances were accompanied by Study Guides containing activities teachers could conduct with their students before, and after the performance. Finally, touring performances allowed teachers and students to come into contact with the wider

⁴⁸ These performances are provided by the Queensland Arts Council who have a selection of arts programs that tour schools at a minimal cost.

professional industry that could lead to future artists-in-residence programs with the school, and professional development opportunities for teachers.

Besides inviting performances to the school, students were also taken on excursions to watch performances at theatre venues⁴⁹. These excursions helped complement the curriculum in providing students with opportunities to witness dramatic forms and conventions learnt in the classroom used by professional artists. It may have also enlarged their understanding of a particular text being studied. Watching a performance at a theatre venue also gave students an overall theatrical experience which was more difficult to create in schools due to the lack of facilities.

Opportunities were also provided for students to present their learning experiences, and skills learnt in the classroom to a wider audience. Students at both Springvale State High School and All Saints College often performed for the school community. These took place during assembly periods or lunch hour. They also performed during school events, as well as state events such as Education Week, conferences, and youth theatre festivals. Both schools also have a Drama Club where students can extend their drama experiences further and perform in school productions for the wider community. These opportunities of performing for an audience allowed students to garner audience responses, and contributed towards the evaluation of their work. It also gave students performing-related experiences and occasions to be seen as artists.

⁴⁹ The *Drama Senior Syllabus* recommends at least one field excursion per semester (Queensland Board of Senior Secondary School Studies, 2000: 16).

To end, amongst the findings in this dimension, a salient finding was the opportunities students were provided to extend their learning experiences beyond the core curriculum as they worked with artists, watched, and participated in performances. Experiences such as these transported students into the realm of identifying themselves as artists, thereby increasing the value of their work. It also demonstrates the school's commitment to drama and its potential as a vocation for students.

The reporting now shifts to the pedagogical dimension.

The Pedagogical Dimension

This section on the reporting of the fieldwork aims to understand the characteristics, and attitudes of the teachers studied leading toward an effective drama in education practice.

The findings revealed that teachers had a passion for the arts that extended beyond their role in the school, and was a strong driving force in their work. Their pedagogy aimed to provide students with a nurturing, and empowering education through drama.

Findings also included the support structures provided by other teachers within, and outside the school to be important to a teacher's practice. Finally, the teachers studied took professional development seriously, with attempts made to develop themselves further through participating in the wider professional community, and/or through efforts at the school level.

A Passion for The Arts

An obvious finding from the fieldwork was the love of the arts all three teachers had. They were artists in addition to being teachers. This passion for the arts was an important motivating factor in their work.

Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) stated, 'I've always loved performing, so my passions in life are live theatre, music and drawing' (Appendix A: 2, lines 53 - 54). Amongst other things stuck on Donna's wall in her office is an article on *How To Be An Artist*. Both Karen (HOD, All Saints College) and Jenny's (Specialist Drama Teacher, Blessed Heart College) experiences as artists with youth theatre companies encouraged them to become teachers. Karen shared that she 'enjoyed generating a love of the arts on many levels not only through performance' but also by 'building community through the arts' (Appendix A: 3, lines 9 - 11).

These teachers' love of the arts and teaching has led them to see their vocation as more of a passion than a job. Karen (HOD, All Saints College) stated that she and her faculty 'all love the arts; we all have arts-based lives and we all want to keep making that our lives and not just a job. It's a passion' (Appendix A: 3, lines 765 - 767). This attitude was reflected around Karen's work area which was covered entirely with cards, photos, student work, and other material related to drama, and previous productions she had been involved in.

A Nurturing and Empowering Pedagogy

Findings revealed that the philosophy of the teachers studied was to nurture, and provide an empowering pedagogy for their students. This was congruent with the aims of drama in education, and the school discussed under the intentional dimension. Findings fell into three main categories: providing life-skills; values and moral education; and an aesthetic education.

Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) stated that her ‘philosophy for teaching is to nurture students in whatever way I can’ and to ‘prepare them for life’ (Appendix A: 2, lines 540 – 542). She felt that she had to instill in her students ‘a certain level of skills’ (lines 545 – 547) by the time they graduated and viewed herself as a ‘role model in imparting life-skills’ (lines 553 - 555).

The teachers also felt that drama in education contributed towards providing students with an education in personal values. Karen (HOD, All Saints College) stated that ‘drama is the only subject for a lot of students where they examine themselves in their wider context’ (Appendix A: 3, lines 90 - 91). Students are therefore given opportunities to critically examine, and rehearse for life. Edmiston (1995: 116) believes that drama in education should be concerned with providing an ‘ethical’ education for students. He states that ‘as drama educators we are always concerned with relationships among people’ and are therefore ‘moral educators’ (ibid). Therefore, teachers should allow students to challenge, and explore their own values and morals through drama; informing their identity.

Finally, empowerment also arises by providing an education that places equal importance on the cognitive as well as affective states in learning. The provision of an aesthetic education formed the basis of the drama curriculum in schools and required 'teachers to challenge students to look at what it means to be engaged with both your cognitive and emotional intelligence to create art' (Karen, Appendix A: 3, lines 140 - 142).

Working as A Team

Another finding in the pedagogical dimension was the benefits of working together as a team of teachers. This allowed teachers to draw on each other's strengths to plan curriculum, problem-solve and evaluate practice.

As Head of Departments, both Donna (Springvale State High School) and Karen (All Saints College) managed a faculty of teachers. They acknowledged the merits of collaborating with a team of teachers, and encouraged this support structure. Donna has eleven staff under her management and they 'vary in personality, in professional background, in age, in knowledge and content so a lot of sharing happens, across faculties as well' (Appendix A: 2, lines 337 - 339). She acknowledged that their differences made it harder to work together occasionally but it also provided them with different perspectives to a problem. Donna shared that her staff planned the drama curriculum together but felt they needed to collaborate more in the areas of teaching; team teaching and evaluating each other's classroom practice.

Karen (HOD, All Saints College) managed nine staff whom she viewed as professionals. Her philosophy was to 'try not to be intrusive or directorial in my role' and instead developed 'constant communication' as a team through weekly group or individual meetings (Appendix A: 3, lines 236 – 240). This was to ensure her staff felt that they had 'professional support' (lines 240 - 241). Creating such an environment enabled 'a very collegial attitude towards planning' which Karen felt was 'really important' (lines 246 - 250). It also encouraged staff to approach her with work-related problems, and allowed teachers to be comfortable with evaluating each other's classroom practice.

The importance of working closely with a team of teachers was exemplified by Jenny's (Specialist Drama Teacher) experience at Blessed Heart College. As the only drama teacher at the college, Jenny worked alone. This proved to be a handicap when planning different units of work for various year levels that attempted to incorporate content from other subjects. Jenny stated that, 'my head got muddled' and had to proceed with planning with her own content ideas (Appendix A: 1, lines 443 – 445). This was unfortunate and prevented students from making links across content areas, thereby gaining a more holistic learning experience.

Networking

The fieldwork found that maintaining links with the wider professional community was important to the teachers studied. This process of networking provided them with a support structure both psychologically and tangibly. Networking allowed teachers to

stay in touch with the wider professional drama in education field, and drama industry. It also provided them with opportunities to extend their own practice beyond the school⁵⁰.

Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) felt it was important to 'be seen and heard' and 'to be part of a group' (Appendix A: 2, lines 678 - 679). This led to the sharing of resources between schools such as lesson plans, ideas, and training for students. It also sometimes resulted in a more economical use of monetary resources.

Networking was an important way for Karen (HOD, All Saints College) to keep in touch with the wider drama in education field and theatre industry. It allowed her opportunities to extend her practice outside of the school, and form partnerships with other artists. Karen commented that she would be professionally 'bored silly if all the performance work the students were involved with was institutionalized or school based' (Appendix A: 3, lines 735 - 737). Working with other artists also allowed her to make informed choices for artist-in-residence experiences for her students. These opportunities were further used to benchmark her students' work to the professional industry standard, through which the quality of the school's drama program was gauged. The process of networking was also found to provide teachers opportunities to 'keep meeting people who might employ our students', therefore enabling the school to sustain students into the industry (Karen, Appendix A: 3, lines 737 – 738).

⁵⁰ Opportunities to network presented themselves when teachers pursued professional development. Other instances included Head of Department cluster meetings between different schools. There were also informal means of networking such as reading, and contributing to newsletters circulated by Education Queensland, the teacher's unions, as well as drama in education journals. As well, each state funded school had a website hosted by Education Queensland where they could update information and resources electronically, providing another opportunity for schools to network.

Professional Development

The teachers interviewed during the fieldwork were all conscious of the need for professional development to ensure their pedagogy continued to be relevant, and their practice effective. Professional development could occur within the school setting, and/or participating in the wider professional community.

Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) believed in the importance of professional development because ‘things (were) moving so fast’, referring to the revised drama syllabus, advancements in technology, and changes in educational philosophy (Appendix A: 2, lines 626 - 628).

Karen (HOD, All Saints College) was pro-active about professional development and looked for these opportunities for her staff outside the school setting. She encouraged them to professionally develop by attending sessions with them, or helping to organize it. However, professional development did not necessarily have to be formalized and could transpire within the school. This was through professional information sharing, creating resource files with a lot of professional reading, and ensuring the existence of an extensive resource library for teachers to access for their own development.

Additionally, pre-service teacher mentoring provided existing teachers with opportunities to professionally develop. Pre-service teachers attached to the school were able to share the latest in drama theory and pedagogy with teachers within the school; through their training at a tertiary institution. Donna shared that the current

pre-service teacher she was mentoring taught her a lot about the use of technology, and has given her 'new games to play with the drama students' (Appendix A: 2, lines 612 - 614).

To end, amongst the findings in the pedagogical dimension, the most salient was the amount of passion teachers had for the arts that extended beyond their jobs. This passion provided the motivation behind their work, where they regarded themselves as artists as well as teachers. McLean (1999: 5), in a paper delivered to drama educationists in Australia on drama in education in the 21st century, advocates for the importance of the teacher-artist, 'a new role in the theatre/education mix'. The teacher-artist is an important person in the quest to privilege young people's voices, and to create valuable works of art that are relevant to young people (ibid: 8). Therefore, she states that teachers should engage in art-making and continue to develop their artistic selves. This will not only improve their own teaching practice and students' learning, but also contribute towards producing important and credible children and young people's dramatic work in the wider theatre industry.

The findings now turn to the last dimension in 'the ecology of schooling', the evaluative dimension.

The Evaluative Dimension

The evaluative dimension is concerned with the aims and processes of assessment in a school setting.

The fieldwork found that assessment was an important component in the settings studied. It found that there were three main areas of assessment within the schools: student assessment, drama program evaluation, and teacher evaluation. Assessment helped to guarantee that student learning was taking place at an optimum, and provided tangible evidence that they were experiencing an aesthetic education.

Purposes of Student Assessment

The fieldwork conducted in the three research settings found that student assessment fulfilled three main purposes: diagnostic, formative and summative.

Assessment was an integral component of the drama programs in the schools studied. It allowed teachers to make judgments on students' learning progress, and therefore identify problems and strategies to assist in student learning. Conducting assessments over the course of the study also allowed teachers to inform students and their parents on their progress so that they would be able to monitor their learning, and adopt appropriate strategies to meet targeted outcomes. Finally, assessment played a role in the larger education system when it was used to determine the next level of study, and whether students were suited to continue pursuing drama. It provided teachers, students, and parents the opportunity to make judgments on overall student learning and achievements, and contributed to decisions on future learning directions. It also allowed education authorities to monitor the standard and quality of drama programs in schools in Queensland.

Drama students in the three schools studied were assessed according to the requirements and procedures outlined in *The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus* (2001), and the *Drama Senior Syllabus* (2000) respectively.

This involved using the aesthetic fields of *forming*, *presenting* and *responding* as the three main assessment categories. Students were assessed on their ability to understand and use dramatic conventions and forms to create dramatic works. They were also evaluated as to whether they could analyze and critique dramatic processes and works, and provide their own interpretations.

It was found that student assessment at both the primary and secondary levels involved a clear and focused process where both teachers and students were aware of what was being assessed, and the behaviors expected⁵¹. Additionally, assessment occurred processually over the course of study, thereby fulfilling the diagnostic aims of assessment. This acknowledged that students' needs were not constant, and that learning was a dynamic process. Evidence of learning was collected and stored in individual student folios, and accessed by teachers whenever judgments on learning

⁵¹ At the primary level, this was reflected in an outcomes-based education where successful learning was described in terms of behavioral outcomes. These outcomes described what students 'should know and be able to do' (Queensland School Curriculum Council, 2001: 44). These were expressed as statements at the different levels of schooling. At the secondary level, these expectations were reflected in a task sheet given to students for each assessment. An assessment schema was also developed to scope student behaviors expected during assessment. This provided teachers with detailed descriptions of possible behavioral outcomes, and assisted in making judgments.

were made. This process of collecting evidence on student learning was a systematic process in order for findings to be meaningful and thorough.

The fieldwork further revealed that student assessments in drama were fair. It found that assessment influenced planning of the drama curriculum. This was to ensure that students were only being assessed for what was taught. Assessment was also fair as teachers had to use a range of assessment techniques, and contexts when collecting evidence on learning. This ensured an equitable curriculum that took into consideration different types of learners. Furthermore, it was also found that the assessment process at the end of Year 12 involved not only the judgments made by the teacher, but also the Queensland Board of Senior Secondary School Studies (Q.B.S.S.S.S.). The provision of an independent body of assessors ensured that students were being fairly assessed. Their work was also compared to students from all the other schools in Queensland to ensure that judgments made by individual teachers across schools were consistent and fair.

Drama Program Evaluation

Besides assessing student learning in the drama program, teachers were also interested in evaluating the quality of the drama program itself.

The fieldwork found that students in the schools studied were asked for feedback on the drama program they were experiencing. This could be in the form of informal evaluations such as classroom discussions, or discussions with particular students; or

formal evaluations. Karen (HOD, All Saints College) shared that she occasionally organizes formal evaluations on the drama program between her staff and students. This was usually done with students who were choosing subjects for the following year, and provided them with opportunities to discuss the drama program. It also enabled drama staff to ensure their subject continued to be relevant and accessible to students.

Another indicator whether a drama program was successful was through gauging the responses from other students in the school, as well as parents. Karen stated that positive experiences and work in the drama classroom is usually 'spread by word of mouth' and would come back to her (Appendix A: 3, lines 685 - 686). Parents at All Saints College were also 'conscious of the curriculum' and would inform Karen if they felt the quality of the drama program was declining (lines 636 -639).

The fieldwork also discovered that at the secondary level, the drama work programs of all schools had to be submitted to the Q.B.S.S.S.S. for verification and approval. This helped ensure that the standard and quality of drama programs in Queensland were consistently high.

Teacher Evaluation

Research in the field found that the teachers studied reflected on their practice in a variety of ways: through other teachers; students; and the wider professional

community. This enabled them to continue providing effective and impactful classroom practice.

Both Donna (Springvale State High School) and Karen (All Saints College) as Heads of Departments are responsible for teacher observations within their faculty. However, they are open to teachers observing their practice as well, and providing feedback. They both also utilize pre-service teachers attached to them to gather responses to their classroom practice.

On top of teacher evaluations, Karen (HOD, All Saints College) also ‘tests’ her own practice by gathering students’ feedback (Appendix A: 3, lines 1154 – 1155). Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) shared that the school often had a lot of graduating students returning to thank the teachers for their schooling experiences, and to keep in touch. This could be another measure of successful teaching.

Finally, participating in the wider professional community enabled teachers to evaluate the standard and quality of their practice against other teachers. This was through ‘being connected closely to other teachers professionally, seeing their students’ work, discussing approaches to work with them, (and) connecting with other work programs’ (Karen, Appendix A: 3, lines 1130 - 1132). Karen also used a ‘vocational dimension’ to assess how successful she was as a teacher by examining the number of students that joined the arts industry after they graduated (ibid: 69 – 73).

To end, the most meaningful finding in this dimension was the thoroughness involved in student assessment. Assessments were relevant, useful and fair. They were focused on aesthetic learning and therefore supported the aims of drama syllabi. Moreover, there was a system of checks and balances built into the assessment process to ensure that judgments made were weighted and accurate. This was seen especially at the secondary level where the Q.B.S.S.S.S. was involved as an independent assessment body. The findings therefore demonstrate the commitment schools had to the assessment process, and the importance of its outcomes in helping to maintain the integrity of drama as a subject. It also ensured a high quality of artists produced.

Conclusion

To conclude this chapter, the findings in Brisbane, Australia have shown that a Socratic education as outlined by Abbs (1994) is being provided for students in the schools studied. This has been possible because of the philosophical and tangible support given by Education Queensland, as well as support from educators and artists.

The findings in the various dimensions demonstrate that young Queenslanders will achieve the goals set in *2010 Queensland State Education* (2000) – life-long learners who are aware of their cultural heritage and environment yet attuned to the world, adaptable and well-skilled people for the workforce with high inter-personal and intra-personal skills, creative and critical thinkers, and Australians who will contribute towards the development and growth of the country.

However, there are some challenges presented in this journey. The study, *Australians and The Arts* revealed that ‘the vast majority of people would feel more positive about the arts if there were “better education and opportunities for kids in the arts”’ (Costantoura, 2000: 86). Another related finding expressed the need for the arts sector ‘to work with teachers and students to generate more effective education and opportunities for children in the arts’ (ibid). Therefore, more still needs to be done in bringing aesthetic learning experiences to young Queenslanders.

Perhaps the introduction of *The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus* will address the above concerns somewhat. However, primary school teachers would need to be trained in the arts beforehand. Other challenges facing drama in education demonstrated by findings from the fieldwork include planning for sufficient suitable spaces, allocating sufficient time in the time-table, and integrating the role of technology into the curriculum.

The study now turns to findings from the fieldwork in Singapore.

DRAMA IN EDUCATION PRACTICE IN SINGAPORE

This chapter shifts the focus on the reporting of research findings to Singapore. It seeks to discuss the current state of drama in education in Singapore schools. This is done using similar organizational dimensions in the previous chapter – the Intentional, Structural, Curricular, Pedagogical and Evaluative dimensions.

The fieldwork for this chapter focused largely on the drama in education program, *Development Through Drama* conducted by artists from The Necessary Stage at two of the research settings - Mayflower Primary School and Orchid Secondary School. Findings from the third research setting, Merlion Secondary School are reported where relevant.

An introduction to the *Development Through Drama* program can be found at Appendix B: 10, and should be read before the reporting of findings in this chapter.

The Intentional Dimension

The Intentional Dimension is interested in examining the aims of drama in education in the research settings.

Research undertaken for the study in Singapore found state education policy to be an influential factor in determining school, and program aims in all the settings. The aims

of drama in education in all three schools researched were personal development focused and initiated to help students develop life-skills. Thus, learning took place mostly *through* drama versus *in* drama. Out of the three schools, only one school studied was investigating into offering drama as a subject in its own right in the curriculum. Another aim of incorporating drama into curriculum time in all the schools studied was its contribution towards English language learning. As a result, drama in education programs were conducted using English periods. One school had also made drama evaluations part of the English language exams.

Findings in this dimension are reported by research settings.

Mayflower Primary School

The Necessary Stage piloted *Development Through Drama* at Mayflower Primary School. The program was initiated, and developed at the request of the school principal who felt that learning through drama would contribute towards the aims of the school. These aims drew from larger state education policy and strived to provide ‘a balanced, holistic education for our children’ which involved the ‘physical, social, academic, and cultural’ aspects of education (School prospectus, 2001). *Development Through Drama* is one out of a range of enrichment programs provided for students to supplement the core curriculum. These programs were given due importance by being placed during curriculum time.

Another reason why students at Mayflower Primary experienced drama in the curriculum stemmed from the Principal's belief in Gardner's theory of Multiple Intelligences (The Necessary Stage, 2000: 26). The belief that every student has different types of intelligences that need to be identified and nurtured has led to all students in the first and second years of schooling (7 – 8 years old) developing their linguistic, interpersonal and intrapersonal intelligences through drama⁵². However, because the Principal wanted to 'ensure equal opportunity for all pupils to experience at least six of the intelligences', this meant that the focus of enrichment programs at the other levels of schooling shifted away from drama to other areas (ibid: 26). Thus, students' exposure to drama was short-lived, with those interested in pursuing it further having to do so through a Co-Curricular Activity conducted after-school hours.

Orchid Secondary School

The Necessary Stage was invited by the former principal at Orchid Secondary School in 2000 to conduct *Development Through Drama* for a group of Secondary One students, over a period of two years (a total of 36 hours). The program sought to instill confidence in students who were identified as academically weak. These students generally had low self-esteem and learning difficulties. The Principal hoped that by providing an alternative to the normal cognitive-based classroom, and the development of life-skills would result in motivated students. Furthermore, it was believed that learning through drama would help in English language learning which was a problem with the students identified.

⁵² *Development Through Drama* offered at Primary 2 catered mainly to the latter two intelligences whilst a Speech and Drama program conducted by another company focused more on the former.

Orchid Secondary School subsequently decided to make student evaluations from the drama program a part of the English language exams. The school's intention was to provide students who were weak in written English an opportunity to pass the subject if their oracy component was strong. This move was viewed positively by TNS as it raised the status of the drama program within the school. However, it also proved problematic as it confused teachers about the real aims of the program. This was exemplified during evaluation meetings with the school where teachers asked for more written exercises.

Merlion Secondary School

Merlion Secondary School is one of the few schools in Singapore that has a full-time drama teacher. Jessie (Drama Teacher) shared that the school had no intention of incorporating drama into the curriculum when she was hired. It was only at her request that the principal agreed to include it for the lower secondary (13 – 14 years old) students, in 2000.

The aims of drama in education at Merlion Secondary were similar to the *Development Through Drama* program. They were personal development focused and conducted using English periods. Incorporating drama in the curriculum supported Merlion Secondary's aim of ensuring 'the environment is a nurturing one that allows students to find their own space and develop their potential in areas that go beyond the academic' (School prospectus, 2001). This stemmed from their belief that all their students 'can succeed', 'are gifted in different ways' and 'unique in their own way' (ibid). Drama in

education also contributed towards the school's vision for their students who are described as having 'character, confidence and creativity' (ibid).

Drama subsequently became a niche area at Merlion Secondary School, and the Drama Club a popular Co-Curricular Activity. The school is also exploring expanding the scope of drama programs offered during curriculum time using artists-in-residence, as well as looking into the feasibility of offering drama as an elective for the General Cambridge School Examination (GCSE) 'O' Level exams in the upper secondary levels.

To end, the schools studied in Singapore seemed to be more concerned with students' social, rather than aesthetic development. This was despite the fact that state education policy highlighted that education involved developing the child morally, intellectually, physically, socially and aesthetically' (MOE, 2000, <http://www1.moe.edu.sg/desired.htm>). Schools perhaps assumed that students would automatically be learning aesthetically when learning through drama and therefore subsumed it under the socially-oriented aims of the respective drama programs. As well, it seemed that drama was not yet considered important enough to be provided for students at all levels. It also did not deserve periods of its own where its place in the curriculum had to be justified using English periods. This sometimes caused conflicts between artists conducting the drama program, and the English language teachers.

The Structural Dimension

This dimension under the research conducted in Singapore looked at the necessary structures that need to be in place to facilitate drama in education in schools. It found that drama in education programs were either conducted by drama teachers within the school, or artists-in-residence. Both types of educators needed similar support structures in order to facilitate effective drama in education programs.

Findings in this dimension are largely congruent with findings in Brisbane. They include the importance of the philosophical and tangible support of the Principal for drama in education in order for programs to be successful. The necessity for spaces to be of a suitable size and evocative in nature was also reinforced from the findings in two out of the three research settings.

As well, it was found that students in the schools studied were disadvantaged because of the insufficient amount of time devoted to drama in the curriculum. Lessons were only about 45 minutes, and once a week for a period of ten, to thirty weeks being the maximum. A survey conducted with students from Orchid Secondary at the end of an 18-week program found that students 'disliked the short hours' of the program, and 'doing the play without much rehearsal', referring to the short amount of time they had to rehearse for their in-class presentations (student survey, 10 October 2000). Both students and artists often felt rushed for time during the program even though the aim was to allow students to learn through drama process. Moreover, a lack of continuity of offering drama through the schooling levels prevented students of opportunities to

extend their drama skills and experiences. This was unfortunate especially for students who excelled at drama and who wanted to pursue it seriously.

Another hurdle to drama in education was the lack of trained artists in drama pedagogy, and the lack of trained teachers in drama. The latter meant that schools interested in drama in education had to turn to artists to conduct the programs. However, there was simultaneously a shortage of artists to choose from to conduct drama programs that were pedagogically sound. Therefore, some schools had to be turned away due to the inability to find suitable artists. Additionally, in schools that had drama during curriculum time, a less than ideal ratio of students to artist in the classroom was found; twenty to one being the norm.

In the research settings studied, even though some of the artists were adequately trained in drama pedagogy, or had accrued enough classroom experience, working with teachers who had no experience with drama was frustrating. Artists in these schools had to constantly educate teachers on drama methodology and processes, as well as educational versus performance-based outcomes. As well, collaborative partnerships with teachers were never realized due to the teachers' lack of training and therefore inability to participate actively in the planning and evaluating process. Some teachers were also not interested in drama in education.

The fieldwork also found that working with artists had limitations. As they worked freelance, their commitment was often shared amongst several projects. This affected the amount of time and focus they could spend on a particular school. Scheduling also

proved difficult. As well, many freelance artists disliked committing to projects of a long duration, such as the *Development Through Drama* program. Lastly, the drama in education market in Singapore is a competitive one amongst companies, especially given the limited number of trained artists. This has a double impact upon the total number of available artists to choose from as companies are sometimes concerned with artists sharing lesson plans, and practice with other companies.

These findings point to the need for drama programs to be conducted by trained teachers if they are to be offered to more students in more schools, and if they are to be sustained. The model adopted in Brisbane seems most ideal whereby drama teachers are responsible for imparting most of the curriculum, complemented by artists-in-residence who contribute skills and experiences in addition to the teacher.

The Curricular Dimension

This dimension examines the drama curriculum being conducted in schools. It is interested in the aims and outcomes of the curriculum, and how it is planned.

As drama was not a core curriculum subject at the primary and secondary levels in Singapore, there was no formal drama syllabus. Consequently, schools interested in drama had to devise their own curriculum. The fieldwork focused on the *Development Through Drama* program conducted by TNS during curriculum time in schools.

A salient finding in this dimension was the lack of a curriculum that focused on aesthetic learning. The *Development Through Drama* program was focused on developing life-skills and not on imparting dramatic skills to students. Thus, even though students' 'grounded aesthetic' (Willis, 1990: 1) was actively employed in the classroom, the absence of the 'conservationist aesthetic' (Abbs, 1987: 4) meant that students were unable to execute dramatic presentations well. This sometimes had negative consequences upon their confidence levels, and also meant that aesthetic learning was largely lacking in the classroom.

Furthermore, the curriculum was found to be loosely structured, where the aims and outcomes of the program were not sufficiently scoped, sequenced and unpacked. There often was a lack of strong content choices in the work that challenged students. As well, insufficient evocative or 'aesthetically-charged' materials were introduced in the classroom to stimulate students' imagination, and cognitive and affective processes (MacDonald, 1993: 86). As a result, students were often expected to devise and create pieces of work based on their own experiences. This was sometimes difficult without strong starting points, and where their experiences were sometimes limited. Consequently, classroom presentations were often shallow.

Findings in this dimension therefore reinforce the importance of learning *in* drama; imparting dramatic skills and forms to students, along with opportunities for them to contribute to lesson content from their immediate culture.

The Pedagogical Dimension

The pedagogical dimension focuses on the teacher or artist in the classroom. It is interested in drama practice, and the attitudes that inform it.

The fieldwork discovered that artists and teachers in Singapore viewed drama in education as an opportunity to empower students. This was through connecting students with their affective domain, and enabling them to be critically conscious of themselves and the world around them, in order to develop their 'voice'. This was largely congruent with the aims of the drama programmes although challenges as outlined in the Structural and Curricular dimensions often hampered their efforts.

Ruth (Artist, Mayflower Primary School) believed that drama empowers by offering students an education that deals with feelings and emotions. It develops students' 'emotional intelligence in an experiential manner' which was currently not offered in the core curriculum in Singapore schools (Appendix A: 4, lines 95 - 97). She felt that the academic-based subjects only stressed the importance of using the brain, whereas 'in drama you engage your mind, emotions and your body' (lines 101 - 102). Furthermore, the physicality of drama that interacts with mental processes results in the unique learning nature of drama. It also involves the senses and 'comes straight from your gut, your instincts' (lines 103 - 104). Ruth explained that this was the reason why drama is 'so affecting' and powerful, because 'not just the mental but your whole presence is needed' (lines 109 - 110).

Jessie (Drama Teacher, Merlion Secondary School), like Ruth felt that education in Singapore discouraged emoting. She believed that while her students felt a lot, they lacked the courage to express their feelings, or did not know how. She realized this was because 'they are not trained' to do so (Appendix A: 5, lines 169 - 172). Drama, on the other hand gave students opportunities to express these emotions. It also provided a structure to handle the emotions effectively and 'channel them somewhere' (lines 178 - 179). This prevented students from being overly emotional, but to instead understand and harness these emotions to produce constructive learning experiences.

In addition, drama was thought to empower students with a 'voice'. It was agreed that most students in the Singapore school system were not taught how to think critically, and lacked the skills, as well as opportunities to express themselves. Furthermore, learning in schools was still largely teacher-directed and centered. Drama therefore provided students with opportunities, and a form to express their thoughts and feelings. They were required to be critical of content introduced in the classroom, as well as form individual responses. Jessie (Drama Teacher, Merlion Secondary School) shared how she was empowered by her own experiences with drama:

I'm speaking from experience. Drama's role in my life was one of empowerment. It allowed me to see that there is a world beyond myself, and it gave me an opportunity to participate in this world. It is the empowerment of a voice, of my voice.

(Appendix A: 5, lines 76 - 79)

As a result, Jessie aimed to help her students find their own voices, and to use them. She believed that drama draws students into 'a world where you are experimenting with your imagination' in a 'safe and secure space'. It allows students to think and say

‘things that are taboo’ (lines 110 - 113). As a result, students are encouraged to think critically. They are also allowed opportunities to explore and enact multiple perspectives. This, together with ‘tools for reflection’ introduced into the classroom ensured students were ‘better able to make sense of what is going on’ in drama (lines 119 - 121). Students who are empowered would be confident of themselves and their identities, and would want to express their voice, and be heard.

Finally, it was felt that while artists and teachers sought to encourage students to think critically, they were sometimes hampered by the fear of offending the school, and implicating themselves. As a result, some potentially sensitive topics such as race relations were avoided in the classroom. The fear of being offensive also stemmed from the system of governance in Singapore which adopted a harsh stance towards criticism of its philosophy and policies. As a result, critically examining and discussing policies in Singapore in the classroom was still difficult for many teachers and artists. Unfortunately, this placed an invisible boundary around content areas and their potential to provide empowering experiences in the classroom.

The Evaluative Dimension

This final dimension in ‘the ecology of schooling’ examines how assessment takes place in the school. This is with regards to drama in education and takes into account student, teacher/artist, and program evaluations. It is also interested in the aims of

assessment and what are the implications of the various findings. The fieldwork in this dimension focused on the *Development Through Drama* program⁵³.

It was found that student assessment focused largely on diagnostic and formative aims. The evaluation of students helped artists conducting the program to devise teaching strategies, and to monitor student development. Student evaluations also enabled artists and teachers to assess whether program aims were being met, and subsequently the effectiveness of the program. Only one out of the three schools studied had a summative aim towards student assessment whereby marks were assigned and incorporated with English language.

The fieldwork discovered that while efforts were made to assess student learning processually, assessment objectives and procedures were unclear. There was a lack of well-defined assessment criteria that was sufficiently unpacked, and related back to the aims of the program. Assessment schemas were also absent. Furthermore, there were no clear junctures for student evaluation during the program, which may have resulted in uneven student evaluations. This could have affected the meaningfulness of judgments made.

As well, the lack of focus on aesthetic learning with the presence of the ‘conservationist aesthetic’ or the learning of dramatic skills proved challenging to the assessment process. It was difficult to assess personal development outcomes as they lacked distinct forms. Other challenges to student assessment included the large

⁵³ Criteria for student assessment for the *Development Through Drama* program at Mayflower Primary School and Orchid Secondary School can be found at Appendix B: 11.

number of twenty students in each class, and the short interaction time of an hour a week making it difficult for artists to conduct meaningful evaluations.

In the area of artist and program evaluation, the fieldwork found that regular feedback was given to artists based on classroom observations made by staff from TNS. Feedback was also sought from teachers who judged the effectiveness of the artists from the attitudes and behaviors of their students. Similarly, evaluation of the *Development Through Drama* program was derived from classroom observations, and artist and teacher feedback. Unfortunately, feedback from students which would have added a valuable dimension to the assessment process was not sought in all schools.

Conclusion

To end, although the fieldwork found that schools in Singapore were focusing on providing a holistic education for students, aesthetic aims were still lacking. The emphasis for drama programs was on personal development, and imparting life-skills to students. Besides depriving young Singaporeans of aesthetic learning experiences, the lack of aesthetic aims affected curriculum planning and evaluation. It also impacted upon the quality of work produced by the students.

Finally, the fieldwork highlighted the urgent need for trained artists and teachers in drama in education if more students were to benefit from a Socratic education.

Findings from this chapter, as well as chapter four will be reiterated, and integrated with the literature earlier reviewed in the next chapter. This final chapter will contain overall conclusions as well as recommendations for drama in education in Singapore.

**THE WAY FORWARD: RECOMMENDATIONS FOR
DRAMA IN EDUCATION IN SINGAPORE**

... if the school is to be successful, it must offer *more* than critical analysis. It must offer also forms of ritual and creative symbolism. It must attempt to create a living culture in which the young can participate and develop as responsive and responsible individuals within an encompassing community.

(Abbs, 1979: 85)

This study has shown the significance and importance of providing a Socratic education for all students in the Literature Review. It further demonstrated that this was congruent with the present direction, and aims of education in Singapore although in reality, was largely still lacking in school practices.

The fieldwork conducted in both Brisbane and Singapore found that education in both countries shared similar broad aims: to develop the individual potential of students by providing an ability-driven, learner-centered education; to enable students to be critical thinkers and life-long learners; and to provide a holistic education. However, while the schools and curriculum studied in Brisbane seemed to be achieving their aims in the area of drama in education, it was not the case in Singapore. This was due to a combination of factors such as the lack of training in drama and drama pedagogy, a lack of understanding of what an aesthetic education entailed, prizing other areas of student development over aesthetic development, lack of structural support for drama, and the lack of opportunities for all students in Singapore to experience an in-depth aesthetic education.

This chapter will reiterate the need for schools in Singapore to provide a Socratic education through harnessing a constructivist and critical pedagogy, and allowing students to learn aesthetically. It will use, and synthesize findings across the organizational dimensions utilized earlier in chapters four and five to support arguments discussed in the Literature Review, in order to make recommendations for drama in education in Singapore.

Harnessing A Critical and Constructivist Pedagogy

One of the components of providing a Socratic education for students is harnessing a critical and constructivist pedagogy. This will empower teachers to make schools in Singapore ‘crucibles for questioning and learning’ (Ministry of Education, 2000: 30).

However, in order to engage this pedagogy effectively, teacher training that embraces this methodology is necessary especially since these are relatively new paradigms being advocated in Singapore schools. It was until recently that the learning of propositional knowledge still dominated education. Additionally, the history of the system of governance in Singapore discouraged critical thinking in its citizens, and conformity was encouraged and rewarded. Therefore, the government must be supportive by allowing critical dialogue and exploration to take place, resulting in new knowledge constructions. This however has to be more than just ‘thinking skills’ and involves the examination of the ‘social function of particular forms of knowledge’ (McLaren, 1989: 161).

Consequently, teachers, artists and students must feel sufficiently secure to examine difficult, and sensitive issues in the classroom without the fear of censorship, rebuke or punishment. It is then that creativity and innovation can occur as 'reflectiveness' is the first step in the creative process (Feldman, Csikszentmihalyi & Gardner, 1994: 32). It is also an important skill in a knowledge-based economy where information is made easily accessible with technology. Students need to be taught how to handle information, and use it meaningfully and responsibly. Equipping students with critical thinking skills will 'prepare our youth to be discerning and astute users of information and innovative creators of knowledge' (Ministry of Education, 2000: 19).

Simultaneously, knowledge should not be rarified. Instead, students should learn, and be encouraged to create and construct meaning, and new knowledge for themselves. In 'an uncertain future' (ibid: 61), education should foster the 'appreciation for a multiplicity of truths and options', so that students will be equipped to deal with problems and challenges that are 'rarely unidimensional' (Brooks & Brooks, 1993: 111).

Adopting a critical and constructivist pedagogy in the classroom would require teachers to empower students to find, and express their 'voice'. Jessie (Drama Teacher, Merlion Secondary School) believed that drama draws students into 'a world where you are experimenting with your imagination' in a 'safe and secure space'. It allows students to think and say 'things that are taboo' (Appendix A: 5, lines 110 - 113). Students are therefore provided with opportunities to critically examine issues and 'participate in this world' (line 78).

The importance of allowing student voices in the classroom is emphasized in both critical and constructivist theories. Critical and constructivist educators both highlight that teachers' voices should not dominate classroom time in a uni-directional mode from teacher to student, but instead dialogues between teacher and students, and students with each other should be encouraged. Critical theorists term this, 'disappropriation' whereby teachers should 'deliberately cast off authority as speaker so that students can claim some authority of their own' (McLaren, 1989: 235). This 'primacy of voice' should form the teaching-learning model in the classroom.

Similarly, constructivists state that teacher-student, and student-to-student dialogue in the classroom contribute positively to the meaning making process, and empowers students to have ownership, and an interest in learning. Furthermore, student-to-student dialogue, or 'cooperative learning' has been found to benefit interpersonal relationships between students, which is useful especially when dealing with issues such as prejudice and discrimination (Brooks & Brooks, 1993: 108 - 110). This would be useful in Singapore classrooms where dissonances between the various races were often observed.

Therefore, all drama teachers have the responsibility of empowering students to find their 'voice'. This is achieved through providing a wide range of content and contexts for exploration in the classroom, allowing dialogues to occur, and student voices to be heard. Edmiston states that because of this responsibility, all drama teachers are simultaneously 'moral educators', as 'there are moral messages and meanings in every classroom interaction and every teacher choice' (Edmiston, 1995: 115). Through

classroom dialogues, the morality of teachers' and students' opinions and actions are discussed and evaluated, allowing 'ethical understandings' to occur (ibid). These dialogues are to be encouraged as the process enables students to develop their own morality, as opposed to being told 'what to think' or endorsing 'moral relativism' (ibid: 116).

Consequently, a 'circle of care' (ibid: 123) is developed in the classroom as teachers converse with their students, where students dialogue with each other, and ultimately with themselves; forging their identities as players within communities, society, and the global village.

To end, critical and constructivist pedagogies are key paradigms in a Socratic education. Harnessing them would enable what Giroux terms, a 'language of possibility' whereby students are actively engaged in the making of society, leading to 'social transformation' (McLaren, 1989: 189 - 190). Consequently, young Singaporeans would be committed to the growth and remaking of the country, fulfilling the aims of 'Singapore 21' (Goh, 1999, www.singapore21.org/speeches_240499.html).

Providing an Aesthetic Education

Fundamentally, the arts matter because they are able to render visible or audible profound transpersonal meanings. It is these "problems of life" that scientific inquiry cannot touch that the arts have the power and the symbolic means to address. The arts offer us metaphors illuminating the human condition. They provoke and nurture an understanding of ourselves.

(Abbs, 1994: 49)

The other crucial component that encompasses learning in the Socratic mode is to provide students with an aesthetic education. This ensures that students' learning experiences are holistic and utilize both the cognitive and affective. However, the literature earlier reviewed demonstrated that there was a lack of focus on aesthetic education in Singapore schools. This was due to the arts being misunderstood as 'soft, irrational, and incidental to our needs as logical, rational beings' (Wong, 2001, <http://www.gov.sg/sgip/announce/070801aw.htm>).

The fieldwork in both Brisbane and Singapore, and the literature reviewed have proved the above statement as a misconception. As humans, we react and respond firstly through our senses but it is together with the mind that meaning is attributed to these sensations. Abbs (1989: 210) states that, 'art has its roots in instinct (hence its power) and its blossom in consciousness (hence its educative importance)'. Therefore, aesthetic learning involves both the cognitive and affective resulting in a powerful and holistic way of meaning making absent in many other subjects in school. Teachers interviewed for this study stated that one of their aims in drama was to give students 'confidence in the feeling levels in their lives as part of their intellectual and cognitive experience' (Karen, Appendix A: 3, lines 160 - 162).

Furthermore, Best (1992: 142) states that teachers can provide students with an 'education of feeling' which arises through the learning of the art form. He states that, 'the education of feeling in the arts consists in giving reasons for, and encouraging people to recognize for themselves, different conceptions of a work of art'. Therefore, through teaching students the skills, elements and conventions of an art form(s), or 'more finely discriminating conceptions of the arts', teachers are providing 'the possibility of a progressive development of more finely discriminated feelings' in students (ibid). Consequently, students learn a range of feelings, and how to make sense of, and express them.

This contributes towards the development of an emotional intelligence; an equally important intelligence required in many situations, and in interactions with each other. Gardner terms this interpersonal, and intrapersonal intelligence (Campbell, 1999: xvi). Similarly, Robinson (2001: 154) states that the affect, or our emotional intelligence has a role to play in creativity and should not be neglected.

Therefore, schools in Singapore need to realize and acknowledge the role of an aesthetic education in their curriculum. This would result in students who are emotionally intelligent and cognitively smart. Even though some schools have awakened to this need, such as those studied during the fieldwork, there is still a resistance to whole-heartedly embrace aesthetic learning in the curriculum. Perhaps as state-run and funded schools, there needs to be a stronger commitment from policy makers in encouraging an aesthetic education through making all the arts as subjects in

the curriculum. It is only then that the balance between cognitive and affective learning in schools will be redressed, and a holistic education achieved.

The Aesthetic Curriculum

The Arts as A Generic Community of Subjects

An education system that acknowledges the importance of an aesthetic education should provide students with opportunities to learn all of the different art forms, or symbolic languages in the arts. To only teach art and music in the curriculum as is currently practiced in Singapore is to deprive young Singaporeans opportunities to learn, and make meaning in other modes offered by the other art forms. Furthermore, an ability-driven education system should allow students opportunities to discover and develop their talents in the different art disciplines; honing and harnessing their multiple intelligences. This requires the arts to be understood as a generic community of subjects that are different yet complementary.

A Strong Foundation in The Arts

Another important factor to consider in order for young Singaporeans to reap the full benefits of an arts education is the need for in-depth and prolonged aesthetic learning experiences. Aesthetic learning should begin at a young age with exposure to all art forms, followed by opportunities for specialization in the teenage years and beyond. This is the model that arts educators in Queensland have adopted and resonates with

studies from *The Champions of Change* (1999). The latter found that only ‘high-arts’ students, or students who experienced prolonged or intense exposure to the arts benefited from learning aesthetically. Additionally, these results only surfaced after a significant period of time, and were found to also increase with time.

As well, a strong foundation, and in-depth experiences in arts learning ensures that students master ‘the knowledge contained in a domain’, thereby becoming ‘the source of variations in the knowledge system of a domain’; encouraging creativity to occur (Feldman, Csikszentmihalyi & Gardner, 1994: 22).

The Conservationist and Grounded Aesthetic

The ‘conservationist’ (Abbs, 1987: 4) and ‘grounded’ aesthetic (Willis, 1990: 1) were two aesthetic paradigms reviewed for this study, and were found to be crucial for aesthetic learning in the classroom.

However, the fieldwork in Singapore found that schools that offered drama programs during curriculum time had their aims rooted in students’ personal and social development. There were also hidden aims to improve spoken English. Therefore, the lack of emphasis on an aesthetic education resulted in a weak acquisition of dramatic skills, a loosely structured curriculum and the absence of aesthetic learning in the classroom. The learning *through* drama model in the Singapore classrooms studied was partially compromised because students had no prior experience of learning *in* drama. Hornbrook states that:

A dramatic curriculum which pays careful attention to theatre practice will allow drama teachers access to a subject framework within which they will be able to focus on the quality of the dramatic product as well as on the issues disclosed by it.

(Hornbrook, 1991: 2)

Therefore, students' personal and social development occurs through the learning and execution of the dramatic form accompanied by the lesson content. The focus should be primarily on the art form and not the lesson content; acknowledging the unique nature of learning through the mind, body and affect. This requires the 'conservationist aesthetic' to be at the heart of the dramatic curriculum where students learn the history and techniques of the various dramatic forms (Abbs, 1987: 4). They should also study dramatic texts which are rich in content for lessons as well.

Aside from the conservationist aesthetic, the 'grounded aesthetic' is also integral in the drama classroom (Willis, 1990: 1). McLaren (1989: 227) states that 'students cannot learn "usefully" unless teachers develop an understanding of the various ways in which student perceptions and identities are constituted'. Aesthetic learning that includes the grounded aesthetic ensures that the meaning making process is relevant and engaging to students. It constitutes schools that are 'cells of creative living' and not places where students feel alienated from daily life (Abbs, 1979: 86). Incorporating students' lived experience and everyday encounters with culture prevents the dichotomy of learning in school as dull and commercial culture as 'colorful, ritualistic, releasing' (ibid: 55). Educators that harness the grounded aesthetic ensure that their lessons involve evocative, and 'aesthetically-charged material', a crucial component that contributes towards aesthetic learning (MacDonald, 1993: 86).

A Student-Centered Curriculum

Findings from the fieldwork in Brisbane revealed that drama curriculum should be student-centered if it is to be maximally beneficial. This involved building rapport, and getting to know one's students. It also meant planning that allowed curriculum to be flexible to take into account learner styles, and development. If necessary, teachers researched into particular students' backgrounds in order to gain a more holistic understanding of him/her to devise useful learning strategies and lesson plans.

Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) often sought feedback on the curriculum from students. This took place usually after the end of every unit, where student responses determined whether lesson plans were re-worked, or replaced the following year. She termed this the 'learning-teaching partnership' where students were encouraged to have ownership over the learning process (Appendix A: 2, lines 203 - 210). She also saw 'no point in a group of adults writing these units thinking they know the students because they have no input' (lines 210 - 212). A similar practice was found at All Saints College, in addition to feedback sessions conducted with students on the drama program as a whole.

Therefore, planning curriculum that is student-centered enables the learning process to be relevant, interesting and meaningful for students. It also allows them ownership over their learning, and is in sync with an ability-driven education.

Integrating Technology into the Curriculum

The importance of technology was reflected in the ethos of schools in both Brisbane and Singapore. This was a reflection of a wider societal trend whereby a knowledge-based economy necessitated the use of technology. The yearbook of the Ministry of Education states that, 'the ability of Singaporeans to continually master new technologies will have a critical impact on our continued global competitiveness' (Ministry of Education, 2000: 19). Technology is the new language of the 21st century and has infiltrated many sectors of the economy. It is a contributing agent in the Creative Industries. However, the fieldwork conducted in both countries found that schools had not yet actively integrated technology into the drama curriculum.

In Brisbane, this was due to the unequal provision of infrastructural resources in schools, and the lack of training most drama teachers had in technology. Another factor that hindered the harnessing of technology was the uncertainty on how to integrate it into the drama curriculum without compromising aesthetic learning; involving the use of the body and the senses, or what Donna (HOD, Springvale State High School) calls, 'the human spirit' (Appendix A: 2, line 290).

Unlike Brisbane, schools in Singapore have technological resources provided in schools⁵⁴. However, integrating technology in drama programs was not a priority in the schools studied. This was because drama teachers and artists found it challenging to

⁵⁴ The Ministry of Education's IT masterplan launched in 1997 saw the installment of computers in classrooms, and teachers and students being trained in using technology. The use of technology is also infused into subject teaching and learning.

even impart basic dramatic skills, and foster aesthetic learning within the short time periods they were given.

However, the increasing presence of technology in education is real, and it is a language of the present and future. Therefore, schools that offer drama as a subject should not ignore its presence but seek to integrate it into their curriculum. This should be in the spirit of viewing technology as a means to an end; to the learning and creating process, but not an end in itself where aesthetic learning is compromised. The integration of technology would also be acknowledging that many students' grounded aesthetic involves the use of technology, where denying its role in contemporary culture would be depriving students of relevant and meaningful learning experiences.

Working with Artists-in-Residence

Findings from the fieldwork demonstrate that artists-in-residence contribute positively to aesthetic learning in schools. However, they seem to be more effective when asked to complement existing classroom work, and when not directly responsible for pedagogical outcomes. In Singapore, many challenges arose when artists wore the hat of drama teachers that affected learning outcomes. Some of them included being responsible for discipline and fostering teamwork amongst students, and educating other teachers and administrators in the school on the merits of drama in education, amongst others.

In Brisbane, students at All Saints College benefited greatly from their interactions with artists invited to their school. These experiences served to extend the learning occurring in their drama classrooms, and provided them with opportunities to work with professional artists. Karen felt that this lent ‘that lovely integrity you lose in classroom practice’ (Appendix A: 3, lines 1000 - 1001). Although these artists were trained pedagogically, they were not ultimately responsible for pedagogical outcomes in the classroom and could instead concentrate on imparting their expertise to the students. The presence of the support of a drama teacher ensured that residencies were beneficial and meaningful for all parties as curriculum could be planned together, and further extended when the residency was over. Thus, artists-in-residencies provide students with a level of skills and experiences that may not be provided by a drama teacher, and complement the curriculum.

Working with artists in schools also contributes towards building, and maintaining the link between schools and the arts industry. *The Arts in Schools* (1982) was a seminal study conducted in the UK commissioned by the Gulbenkian Foundation. It recommends that contact between students and artists can affect the former’s attitudes towards the arts by ‘demystifying them and by emphasizing their basic seriousness’ (Calouste Gulbenkian Foundation, 1982: 117). Interaction with artists may provide the necessary encouragement, and relevant contacts for students looking to join the industry upon graduation. Additionally, drama teachers are able to keep in touch with developments in the industry.

Providing Co-Curricular Activities

Besides working with artists-in-residence, students' participation in co-curricular activities was also found to complement the drama curriculum. These activities took the form of watching performances staged in school by professional artists, theatre excursions, and performing for school and public audiences. They provided students with links, and experiences in the wider theatre industry, as well as opportunities to extend their classroom learning. Students were also allowed to identify themselves as artists which reinforced the seriousness of what was being learnt. All these contributed to deepening students' learning, and made learning in the aesthetic more meaningful.

Both Brisbane and Singapore have an arts education program organized by their respective Arts Councils whereby arts companies tour performances, and offer workshops to schools. These programs serve to expose students to the arts at a professional level, as well as to extend their classroom learning experiences. They also provide teachers opportunities to network with artists in the industry, whom may be invited in the future as artists-in-residence for the school. As well, teachers are allowed opportunities to view, and assess the quality of work produced by professional artists, and in turn, review their own practice and curriculum.

However, the fieldwork found that these performances staged by professional artists in schools seemed to benefit students in Brisbane more than their counterparts in Singapore. Drama students in Brisbane who were learning dramatic elements, forms and conventions in the classroom had opportunities to see these translated by

professional artists. They also had the advantage of accessing a dramatic language thereby providing them with more insights into performances. For most students in Brisbane, these invited performances served to extend their classroom learning, with opportunities to watch role models. For example, the class observed at Blessed Heart College had to do a written response to a touring performance for one of their assessments. On the other hand, the performances in Singapore were more of an introduction, or exposure to the arts for students, and were more entertaining than deeply educational since music was the only performing arts subject offered in the curriculum.

Additionally, it was found that the employment of Education Liaison Officers⁵⁵ (one each for primary and secondary) by the Queensland Arts Council (QAC), proved beneficial to both the organization as well as schools. Touring programs benefited from the artistic and educational expertise an officer trained in a particular art form(s) provided. Arts companies who were not familiar with curriculum and educational outcomes could draw on the expertise of this person. He/she was also responsible for the Quality Assurance Process whereby works were evaluated for their artistic and educational outcomes before touring schools. As well, this officer oversaw the production of Study Guides that accompanied touring performances, and ensured they encouraged aesthetic learning.

Excursions to the theatre to watch performances by professional artists afforded similar benefits to students as watching a performance in school. However, the former

⁵⁵ The creation of this role was a collaborative effort between QAC and Education Queensland whereby the Education Liaison Officer is a teacher seconded from the Education Ministry for a duration of time.

has an added benefit of providing the experience of watching a performance in a proper theatre venue. This contributes towards the quality of the performance watched because of the available facilities, and enhances the aesthetic experience. *The Drama Senior Syllabus* recommends ‘one field excursion per semester per year level’ so as ‘to enrich students’ dramatic and theatrical experience and to participate in arts industry related activities’ (Queensland Board of Senior Secondary School Studies, 2000: 12).

Finally, apart from watching professional artists at work within the school and at theatre venues, students themselves need to be provided with opportunities to present their learning experiences to an audience. The fieldwork in Brisbane found that students in the schools studied performed at events within, and outside the school setting. These included lunch-time performances in schools, school-based events, state-based events, as well as productions staged by the school for public audiences. Some of the performances drew from classroom work, while others were created while being part of the school’s Drama Club.

Providing students with performance opportunities apart from those with classroom audiences enables them to gather responses from a wider pool of people, contributing towards aesthetic learning. It also provides them with performing-related experiences. Additionally, performance opportunities outside the school benefits teachers as it provides them with opportunities to extend their practice, as well as network. Karen (HOD, All Saints College) stated that she would be professionally ‘bored silly if all the performance work the students were involved with was institutionalized or school based’ (Appendix A: 3, lines 735 - 737).

Therefore, schools in Singapore should continue to provide students with opportunities to participate in co-curricular activities. However, the learning benefits of these experiences will only be boosted when students simultaneously pursue the arts as subjects. The findings also reveal the benefits of having an Education Liaison Officer as facilitator between arts groups and schools, and could be a feasible model to adopt for Singapore.

To end, schools that implement a strong aesthetic curriculum have the potential to produce students who are creative and critical thinkers, and who have opportunities to develop their multiple intelligences. They would be familiar with using both the cognitive and affective in solving problems and creating products, as well as acquired a new set of symbolic languages to do so. Additionally, these students would have developed ‘a constellation of capacities’ that are a combination of ‘cognitive competencies’ and ‘personal dispositions’ (Burton, 1999: 43), and would have gained life-skills as a result of learning aesthetically. All these benefits are outcomes sought after by educators in Singapore but can only be achieved if the adoption of an aesthetic education is legislated and resources provided.

Resources Necessary for An Aesthetic Education

The fieldwork conducted in both Brisbane and Singapore demonstrated that certain resources are crucial for the success of an aesthetic education in schools.

They include: obtaining the support of the Principal, as well as administrative staff; ensuring a team of drama teachers within the school for support; suitable spaces for drama in terms of size and environment; sufficient time allocated for planning, teaching and learning drama; and enlisting the support and involvement of parents in drama programs and curriculum.

Other important resources are ensuring teachers are passionate about the arts, relevant training is being provided, and teachers are allowed opportunities to network and professionally develop.

A Passion for The Arts

One of the salient findings the fieldwork in Brisbane uncovered was the distinct passion teachers had for the arts. Karen's (HOD, All Saints College) statement, 'we all have arts-based lives, and we all want to keep making that our lives and not just a job. It's a passion' sums up the attitudes of the teachers studied (Appendix A: 3, lines 765 - 767).

Being passionate about the arts provided teachers with a deep satisfaction from their work. They viewed their work not as a job, but an extension of their interests, and lives. Consequently, this attitude provided motivation for their work which was often demanding. It also made teachers advocates for the arts where they sought to educate others within, and outside the school setting on the importance of the arts in education. They also strived to be role models, aware that the arts could easily be 'threatened by

rationalization' (Karen, Appendix A: 3, lines 278 - 281). Thus, the teachers sought to maintain the integrity of arts subjects, and galvanized support for them wherever possible.

In Singapore, a passion for the arts and for educating often came through the artists and educators interviewed. This was exemplified by statements such as this made by Jessie (Drama Teacher, Merlion Secondary School), 'to reach out to the last kid in the row who is straying the furthest away from education because he/she does not know what education means' (Appendix A: 5, lines 45 – 47), and from the artists and educators' deep commitment to empowering their students through drama. This is especially significant when considered against the huge constraints they face in school and from the system, and is probably the prime motivating factor why they are still practicing drama in schools.

Additionally, research states that it is important for arts teachers to continue developing themselves as artists, and not just educators. MacDonald (1993: 87) recommends that teachers 'should foster and maintain a body of artistic practice of their own that is separate from school arts projects'. She found that teachers who did so were more effective in providing aesthetic learning experiences for their students as they were familiar, and in touch with the aesthetic field, as well as the sensory aspects of their lives. In *Gaining the Arts Advantage*, researchers found that the best teachers stayed 'actively engaged in their art form' and recommend that teachers 'continue to learn and grow in mastery of their art form' as well as practice their art (Longley, 1999: 12 – 13). They further found in school districts with the strongest arts education

programs that hiring practices included auditions and portfolio reviews to assess if the applicant was competent in the art form.

McLean (1999: 7) describes the need for teachers to continue pursuing their artistic as well as educational practice as the development of the 'teacher-artist'. This requires acquiring new knowledge and skills in both fields, keeping pace with contemporary philosophies that inform art-making, creating works, watching performances and participating in arts activities, and maintaining links with the professional community and industry. The benefits of being a teacher-artist include becoming a highly effective teacher who is able to facilitate aesthetic learning in the classroom, and the ability to co-create relevant, meaningful, and credible works of art with young people.

Therefore, a passion for the arts is required for teachers to become a teacher-artist as it requires a commitment that involves time and effort; it is 'an ongoing life project' (ibid). On the other hand, being a teacher-artist also provides, and renews one's passion for the arts as it keeps teachers close to their artistic interests; thus forming a reciprocal relationship.

Teacher Training

A salient resource that is lacking in Singapore is the absence of sufficient teachers and artists who are trained in both drama, and drama pedagogy. This is an immediate shortcoming that needs to be addressed if schools in Singapore are to seriously consider offering drama as a subject in the curriculum.

Findings from the fieldwork demonstrate that drama should preferably be taught by full-time teachers as opposed to artists-in-residence if it is a subject in the curriculum. Artists are more unfamiliar with students since they are not based in the school setting. They are also less aware of the nuances of the school. Garnering teacher support and fostering a partnership also proved difficult. Furthermore, as freelancers, it is difficult for them to commit to long-term programs, and continuity with a cohort of students, and drama program becomes an issue. Finally, there are insufficient artists interested, and committed to education to meet the demand of schools in Singapore.

Training to impart an aesthetic education should ensure that all teachers have ‘a philosophical underpinning based on artistic, educational, cultural and critical theory epistemologies’ (McLean, 1996: 41). This ensures that they are familiar, and skilled in not only dramatic theory, but also other relevant areas of study to do with the arts, education, aesthetic and contemporary philosophies. Training should also include learning dramatic skills, as well as studies in pedagogy.

Opportunities to Network and Professionally Develop

Besides obtaining training, teachers also need to professionally develop, and network in order for their pedagogy to be relevant and effective, as well as to remain passionate in their work. The findings from the fieldwork in Brisbane reveal that having an association of drama educators contributes positively to achieving the above. Having

such as association also allows teachers, artists and academics to network with each other, thereby broadening learning experiences.

Teachers interviewed in Brisbane mentioned that they found good role models from being involved in the wider professional community. These role models provided support and encouragement for them in their journey as drama educators. In turn, they were inspired to develop significant practice, and be role models for others. Networking also provided 'positive ways of keeping the enthusiasm and passion going' (Donna, Appendix A: 2, lines 641 - 643). Additionally, it allowed drama educators to share resources and significant practice with each other, thereby providing professional development opportunities.

It is therefore recommended that drama educators in Singapore start an association where networking and professional development can occur. It would provide a place where they find support for each other, and their subject especially when drama in the curriculum is a new area in Singapore. Having a stronger voice would also contribute towards advocating for drama in education initiatives more successfully. Finally, having a national association of drama educators in Singapore would be a first step towards country representation at the international level, where educators in Singapore have unique experiences and practices to contribute to furthering drama in education.

Assessment in An Aesthetic Education

The fieldwork conducted in Brisbane and Singapore found student assessment to be an integral component of the drama curriculum.

The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus defines assessment as ‘the purposeful, systematic and ongoing collection of information about students’ demonstrations of learning outcomes’ (Queensland School Curriculum Council, 2001: 58). There are three main purposes to assessment - diagnostic, formative and summative purposes. This ensures that student assessment is a thorough process, and provides useful and meaningful information about student learning. Through these aims of assessment, teachers, students, and their care-givers are able to discern a student’s learning difficulties and strengths, monitor his/her learning, and determine whether he/she has successfully learnt the subject sufficiently to graduate.

Other significant findings related to assessing outcomes in aesthetic learning include using the aesthetic field, an outcomes-based approach and fair practices.

Using the Aesthetic Field

Drama students in Brisbane are assessed using the aesthetic fields of *forming*, *presenting*, and *responding* as organizational factors⁵⁶. These three fields as postulated

⁵⁶ *The Drama Senior Syllabus* states that forming tasks in assessment ‘are used to assess achievement in the creative process of drama artmaking’. These could be practical or written (Queensland Board of Senior Secondary School Studies, 2000: 26). Presenting tasks ‘are used to assess achievement in the

by Abbs (1987: 55) contribute to learning aesthetically and also influence the organization of drama curriculum.

Students who are assessed using the aesthetic field experience a well-rounded drama education as they are required to learn, and understand a variety of dramatic forms and skills. Additionally, knowledge and skills learnt need to be applied, and demonstrated in performances or written work. Students also need to be able to think critically and defend their ideas and work. The fieldwork found that using the aesthetic field and its expected outcomes for student assessment was more effective and meaningful than the assessment criteria used in the *Development Through Drama* program in Singapore⁵⁷. The latter's criteria was too broad, vague and unrelated to each other making assessment less reliable. They were also partially focused on personal development outcomes, to match the objectives of the program. However, as discussed earlier in this chapter, such outcomes arise from learning aesthetically, *in* drama, and should not form the focus of learning.

Therefore, with drama implemented as a subject within the curriculum, schools in Singapore should assess student learning using the aesthetic field in order to evaluate their development and potential as artists effectively.

presentation and communication of dramatic action to others' (ibid: 27), and finally, responding tasks 'are used to assess achievement in the response to the context, content and meaning of drama' (ibid). These could be either oral or written.

⁵⁷ The assessment criteria of the *Development Through Drama* program can be found at Appendix B: 11.

Using an Outcomes-Based Approach

Other findings from Brisbane revealed that *The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus* assessed students not only through using the aesthetic field, but also an outcomes-based approach. The syllabus states that outcomes ‘describe what students know and can do with what they know as a result of planned learning activities’ (Queensland School Curriculum Council, 2001: 21). This approach towards assessment ensures that students are equipped with concrete learning experiences in drama, and are able to apply what they have learnt into tangible outcomes. Additionally, outcomes are scoped and sequenced, and clearly laid out for the ten years of study, resulting in learning that is broad-based yet sufficiently in-depth.

In response to an outcomes-based approach to planning and assessment in drama, Jenny (Specialist Drama Teacher, Blessed Heart College) stated that:

So suddenly there were benchmarks, and I hate to call them that, but that’s what they are. It gives teachers an understanding of what sorts of skills, processes, attitudes, and knowledge to provide opportunities to students that they can count on. So that is its great strength; that it very clearly lays out what students need to demonstrate that they know and can do.

(Appendix A: 1, lines 222- 227)

An outcomes-based approach therefore has the potential to clarify and focus the planning, and teaching process. It also assists teachers in charting student’s progress and levels of achievement, allowing them to adopt suitable strategies to boost student learning.

Fair Assessment Practices

Students need to be fairly assessed for judgments made on student learning to be meaningful. This includes ensuring students are aware of when, and how they are being assessed, as well as the assessment criteria. This process would be facilitated by an outcomes-based method to assessment, as well as distributing assessment task and criteria sheets to students before the exercise.

As well, assessment criteria should be based solely on skills and knowledge taught in the classroom. Consideration also needs to be given to different learner styles. *The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus* states that ‘a comprehensive range of assessment techniques and related sources of evidence allows students multiple opportunities and contexts in which to demonstrate learning outcomes’ (Queensland School Curriculum Council, 2001: 58). Therefore, students need to be given more than one opportunity to demonstrate learning experiences, and in more than one context using different assessment techniques. Additionally, other forms of difference such as gender, disability, etc. have to be considered during student assessment.

To end, besides assessing student outcomes in aesthetic learning, teachers need to also be reflective of their own practice, and assess the effectiveness of their drama programs. This could result from observing each other’s classroom practice, and providing feedback, as well as garnering student responses. Being part of the wider education and theatre industry also allows teachers to benchmark their practice, and programs against other educators and artists.

Conclusion

To conclude, schools in Singapore can no longer afford to ignore the role an aesthetic education plays in schools. Although critical thinking skills, creativity, an ability-driven, and holistic education are phrases often heard from education officials, more needs to be done to make them a reality. These goals and outcomes in education can be catalyzed by making an aesthetic education an integral part of the schooling experience for students in Singapore. This is through recognizing all the arts as valid subjects to be taught in the curriculum. Together, they reiterate the need for a Socratic education to be provided.

Furthermore, this need is increasingly being recognized by educators, parents and students in Singapore, exemplified in a recent newspaper article published in *The Straits Times* ('Next change: more choice in the classroom, please', 2002: H10). Those interviewed were asked what they would change about education in Singapore if they were the Minister for Education. Most replied less emphasis on exams, and the need for learning to be fun and engaging. This required more emphasis on an ability-driven, and student-centered curriculum and pedagogy, and 'more creative ways of teaching children who may not do well in their studies but have other strengths, such as being good in dance or sports' (ibid). The need to inculcate non-academic skills such as emotional well-being and life-skills was also raised.

Therefore, education in Singapore needs to be empowered to provide holistic learning experiences for students, and learning liberated to instill a love for learning in students; leading to a transformative education. This necessitates more changes and support in favor of a Socratic education in Singapore schools. It is only then that young Singaporeans can rise successfully to the call for Singapore to be a 'renaissance city for the arts' and a 'globapolis' – rooted to Singapore yet connected to the world – in a knowledge-based economy that prizes creativity and human capital (Goh, 2001, http://sg.cna.mediacorpnews.com/ndp2001/rally_en5.htm). Future research should focus on the success of the Socratic curriculum in Singapore if implemented, in fulfilling its aims in education, as well as the larger society.

LIST OF REFERENCES

- Abbs, P. (1979) *Reclamations: essays on culture, mass culture and the curriculum*, Heinemann Educational Books, London.
- Abbs, P. (1987) "Towards A Coherent Arts Aesthetic" in *Living Powers: the arts in education* (Ed, Abbs, P.) The Falmer Press, Hampshire.
- Abbs, P. (1989) "The Pattern of Art-Making" in *The Symbolic Order: a contemporary reader on the arts debate* (Ed, Abbs, P.) The Falmer Press, Sussex.
- Abbs, P. (1994) *The Educational Imperative: a defense of socratic and aesthetic learning*, The Falmer Press, London.
- Best, D. (1992) *The Rationality of Feeling: understanding the arts in education*, The Falmer Press, London.
- Brooks, J. G., Brooks, M. G. (1993) *In Search of Understanding: the case for constructivist classrooms*, Association for Supervision and Curriculum Development, Virginia.
- Burton, J., Horowitz, R., Abeles, H. (1999) "Learning In and Through The Arts: curriculum implications" in *Champions of Change: The Impact of the Arts on Learning* (Ed, Fiske, E. B.) The Arts Education Partnership & The President's Committee on the Arts and the Humanities, Washington D.C., pp. 35 - 46.
- Calouste Gulbenkian Foundation (1982) *The Arts in Schools: principles, practice and provision*, Calouste Gulbenkian Foundation.
- Campbell, L., Campbell, B., Dickinson, D. (1999) *Teaching and Learning Through Multiple Intelligences*, Allyn & Bacon, Boston.
- Catterall, J. S., Chapleau, R., Iwanaga, J. (1999) "Involvement in The Arts and Human Development: general involvement and intensive involvement in music and

- theater arts" in *Champions of Change: The Impact of the Arts on Learning* (Ed, Fiske, E. B.) The Arts Education Partnership & The President's Committee on the Arts and the Humanities, Washington D.C., pp. 1 - 18.
- Costantoura, P. (2000) *Australians and The Arts*, Australia Council, New South Wales.
- Denzin, N., Lincoln, Y. (2000) *Handbook of Qualitative Research*, Sage, London.
- Department of Culture, Media and Sport (2001) *Culture and Creativity: the next ten years*, Department of Culture, Media and Sport, London.
- Dewey, J. (1934) *Art as Experience*, Capricorn Books, New York.
- Edmiston, B. (1995) "Discovering Right Across: understandings through dialogic interactions" in *Selected Readings in Drama and Theatre Education: the IDEA '95 papers* (Eds., Taylor, P., Hoepper, C.) National Association of Drama in Education, Brisbane.
- Eisner, E. W. (1991) *The Enlightened Eye: qualitative inquiry and the enhancement of educational practice*, Macmillan, New York.
- Ely, M. (1991) *Doing Qualitative Research: circles within circles*, The Falmer Press, London.
- Feldman, D. H., Csikszentmihalyi, M., Gardner, H. (1994) *Changing the World: a framework for the study of creativity*, Praeger, Connecticut.
- Gardner, H. (1983) *Frames of Mind: the theory of multiple intelligences*, BasicBooks, New York.
- Gardner, H. (1993) *Multiple Intelligences: the theory in practice*, BasicBooks, New York.
- George, C. (2000) *Singapore, The Air-Conditioned Nation: essays on the politics of comfort and control 1990 - 2000*, Landmark Books, Singapore.

- Goh, C. T. (1999, 24 April) *Speech at the Launch of the Singapore 21 Vision*. (Web Document). URL: www.singapore21.org.sg/speeches_240499.html (2001, 27 August).
- Goh, C. T. (2001, 19 August) *National Day Rally 2001 Speech*. (Web Document). URL: sg.cna.mediacorpnews.com/ndp2001/rally_en5.htm (2001, 31 August).
- Goh, C. T. (2001, 31 August) *Shaping Lives, Moulding Nation*. (Web Document). URL: www1.moe.edu.sg/tdr2001/speeches/spe.htm (2001, 4 September).
- Haseman, B. (1990) *Drama and The Arts in Education: forming curriculum change*, (unpublished study).
- Hornbrook, D. (1991) *Education in Drama: casting the dramatic curriculum*, The Falmer Press, London.
- Lee, J., Quek, T. (2002) "Next Change: more choice in the classroom please", The Straits Times, 7 January, p. H10.
- Longley, L. (ed.) (1999) *Gaining the Arts Advantage: lessons from school districts that value arts education*, The President's Committee on the Arts and the Humanities and Arts Education Partnership, Washington.
- MacDonald, J. (1993) *The Impact of the Educational Setting on the Aesthetic Dimension: a study of three classrooms* (unpublished Masters thesis, Queensland University of Technology).
- McLaren, P. (1989) *Life in Schools: an introduction to critical pedagogy in the foundations of education*, Longman, New York.
- McLaren, P. (1989) *Life in Schools: an introduction to critical pedagogy in the foundations of education*, Longman, New York.

- McLean, J. (1996) *An Aesthetic Framework in Drama: issues and implications*, National Association for Drama in Education, Brisbane.
- McLean, J. (1999) "New Visions Changing Spaces", *JEDA*, vol. 6, November, pp. 5 - 8.
- Ministry of Education (2000) *Desired Outcomes of Education*. (Web Document). URL: www1.moe.edu.sg/desired.htm (2001, 23 October).
- Ministry of Education (2000) *Mission with a Passion: making a difference*, Ministry of Education, Singapore.
- Ministry of Education (2001) *English Language Syllabus for Primary and Secondary Schools*, Curriculum Planning and Development Division, Ministry of Education, Singapore.
- Ministry of Information and The Arts (2000) *Renaissance City Report*. (Web Document). URL: www.mita.gov.sg/renaissance/htm (2001, 23 October).
- Ministry of Information and the Arts, Singapore Tourism Board (2001) *Singapore - Global City for the Arts*, Ministry of Information and the Arts, Singapore Tourism Board, Singapore.
- Ong, A. C. (1999) " Learning Styles and Approaches of Adolescent Learners in Singapore" in *Growing Up In Singapore: research perspectives on adolescents* (Ed, Chang, A., Gopinathan, S., Ho, W. K.) Prentice Hall, Singapore.
- Queensland Board of Senior Secondary School Studies (2000) *Drama Senior Syllabus*, Queensland Board of Senior Secondary Studies, Queensland.
- Queensland School Curriculum Council (2001) *The Arts Years 1 - 10 Syllabus*, Queensland School Curriculum Council, Queensland.
- Robinson, K. (2001) *Out of Our Minds: Learning to be Creative*, Capstone, Oxford.

- Silverman, D. (2000) *Doing Qualitative Research: a practical handbook*, SAGE, London.
- Stinson, M. (1999) "Taking On A New Curriculum" *QADIE SAYS*, vol. 22, July, pp. 7 - 8.
- Tay-Koay, S. L. (1999) "Thinking Processes of Adolescents in Classrooms" in *Growing Up In Singapore: research perspectives on adolescents* (Ed, Chang, A., Gopinathan, S., Ho, W. K.) Prentice Hall, Singapore.
- The Necessary Stage (2000) *Development Through Drama: towards providing a holistic education in Singapore schools*, The Necessary Stage, Singapore.
- The State of Queensland Department of Education (2000) *2010 Queensland State Education*, The State of Queensland Department of Education, Queensland.
- The Straits Times (2001, 18 April) Creativity: system pulls in two directions. (Web Document). URL: www.straitstimes.asia1.com.sg/singapore/story/0,18/0,3/6/6,00.html (2001, 18 April).
- Waite-Stupiansky, S. (1997) *Building Understanding Together: a constructivist approach to early childhood education*, Delmar Publishers, New York.
- Willis, P. (1990) *Common Culture: symbolic work at play in the everyday cultures of the young*, Open University Press, Milton Keynes.
- Wong, A. (2001, 7 August) Speech at the Opening Ceremony for 'Arts Connects' AEP (Art Elective Program). (Web Document). URL: www.gov.sg/sgip/announce/070801aw.htm (2001, 19 September).

**LIBERATING LEARNING AND EMPOWERING EDUCATION:
INCORPORATING DRAMA AS A SUBJECT
IN SINGAPORE SCHOOLS**

Su-Lin Ngiam

**Bachelor of Arts (Honours)
National University of Singapore**

Theatre Studies

Creative Industries Research & Applications Centre

Queensland University of Technology

Submitted for the award of Masters of Arts (Research), March 2002

Volume 2

Appendixes

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Appendix A

1.	Interview with Jenny, Specialist Drama Teacher Blessed Heart College 10 May 2001	1
2.	Interview with Donna, HOD, Performing Arts Springvale State High School 27 April & 16 May 2001	12
3.	Interview with Karen, HOD, Performing Arts All Saints College 1 June 2001	30
4.	Interview with Ruth, Artist Mayflower Primary School 7 September 2001	57
5.	Interview with Jessie, Drama Teacher Merlion Secondary School 1 September 2001	61

Appendix A: 1

Interview with Jenny

Blessed Heart College

10 May 2001

1 Su-Lin: Why did you decide to become a teacher, and how did drama
2 feature in all of that?

3
4 Jenny: I didn't come straight into teaching. I had a background in
5 performing arts. I didn't know whether I wanted to go into acting,
6 or into teaching. So when I finished my degree, I took a year off
7 and I pursued acting full-time. And it was quite successful; which
8 was good. And while I was acting, I was also doing a lot of work
9 with Brisbane Youth Theatre and decided that I really enjoyed the
10 teaching side of it, so I went into Primary School teaching and
11 taught at a school just 40 min. outside of Brisbane; I taught Year 5
12 and 6, and then I came back to a school near Brisbane and taught
13 lower primary, so Year level 1, 2 and 3. So I taught in Primary
14 Schools 6 years as a full-time teacher. But while I was teaching I
15 was using drama methodology. And that was because of my
16 performing arts background. At this stage there was no drama
17 syllabus or guidelines, it was just if you had an interest whereas in
18 secondary, the syllabus was already in existence and was already
19 being taught. This was about 1988.

20
21 Then I came into contact with a lady called Debbie Wall who was
22 then the President of the Queensland Drama Association and had
23 dinner with her. And by the end of the dinner, I was on the
24 committee of the Association. So what happened then was that my
25 whole world opened up in terms of knowing there was an
26 association about the promotion of drama in education. At that
27 stage it was very secondary focused; they didn't look at primary.
28 But I ended up doing a whole lot of workshops about that and at
29 the end of that year, I was asked by the Department of Education
30 to come out of my classroom and go and work with teachers in
31 schools to help them understand how to use drama in education.
32 That was the same year that the curriculum guide came out for
33 *Drama Makes Meaning* which was the guide for teachers who
34 wanted to use drama, that wasn't in the syllabus. It just gave you
35 some ideas. So that happened for 3 years, and I traveled all over
36 the state to help teachers who wanted to use drama. But I got
37 really tired and burnt-out by the end of that.

38
39 After that I worked as an artist-in-residence in schools and there
40 was no one like me at that stage doing the work. I was working in
41 state schools, catholic schools and independent schools. I did that
42 for 2 years, and after that my creative energy just went because

43 just about every single week I had to plan a new unit of drama.
44 And then a position came up where the government was
45 implementing the 8 key learning areas and the arts was one; and
46 12 positions became available in the key learning area - Key
47 Learning Area Regional Coordinator (the Arts). So I applied for 4
48 of the positions around the state and got all of them. So I chose to
49 work in Metropolitan West, which is the largest schooling region
50 in Queensland. It has the largest non-English speaking population,
51 it has the lowest income per capita around the state, so it was a
52 fairly interesting region to work in.

53
54 So I was responsible for about 3 and a half thousand teachers
55 across all art forms – drama, dance, art, music and media
56 education; looking at providing in-service opportunities, going in
57 and setting up support networks, running things like the Minister's
58 Arts Awards, and all those sorts of things. And I only did that for
59 14 months because what happened was the Queensland Arts
60 Council, who is the provider of arts performance programs for
61 schools, headhunted me as an Education Officer, and I had for
62 position for 4 years.

63
64 Then I finished off my Masters full-time, then worked part-time in
65 places like this school where I teach 11 hours a week and working
66 on various other projects. So I guess I'm a freelancer now. I set up
67 my own company last year; all those sorts of things. This year I'm
68 doing my PhD full-time, I'm working here, I'm working at the
69 Queensland School Curriculum Council; writing the primary
70 syllabus, and just doing bits and pieces, like I'm the Education
71 Advisor at the Brisbane Powerhouse; so I write all the curriculum
72 materials to help teachers with the programs I do the Teacher's
73 Notes at La Boite, I do various things. It's nice. I have a little bit
74 of flexibility but still very heavily involved in the art form of
75 drama.

76
77 Su-Lin: Is the company you set up a theatre company?

78
79 Jenny: No. It's an arts curriculum advisory company. So basically I help
80 schools plan their drama curriculum, I can provide workshops for
81 them, stuff like that. What has been interesting is that a lot of
82 professional associations, like the Early Childhood or the English
83 Teacher's Association are now realizing how important, and how
84 useful drama is, so I go and do workshops for their conferences
85 and stuff like that.

86
87 Su-Lin: You mentioned an artist-in-residence scheme that you were a part
88 of for 2 years. Could you elaborate a bit more on that?

89
90 Jenny: About 1993 – 1995 I did that and 5 years prior to that, there was a

91 government scheme where schools through education, could apply
92 for up to \$5,000 to bring an artist into a school to work on a
93 project, like a weaver, or a mural artist, or something like that and
94 predominantly, they brought in visual artists. They wouldn't think
95 of bringing musicians in, or dramatists in, or people like that. And
96 that all collapsed because the scheme simply ran out of money but
97 schools were still very interested in bringing artists in to provide a
98 very focused arts experience for the students, and to provide an
99 avenue of professional development for their teachers because
100 what I demanded was that for the teachers I was working with,
101 came with their kids to the sessions. What happened in a lot of
102 cases was that the teachers thought they had a free hour, and they
103 sent their kids to have an experience, they came back and there
104 would be no follow-up in the classroom. So that's one of the
105 problems with the scheme.
106

107 But basically the way I worked was that I had a number of
108 consultative meetings with the teachers or the teacher I was
109 working with; I worked in a lot of small schools where there were
110 only 3 or 4 teachers and we co-devised what they wanted. So I
111 never came in and said, "I've got this fantastic drama program and
112 this is what we're going to do." There was an element of
113 negotiation and that was important because they felt that they had
114 an ownership of the program. So we did that and that sometimes
115 took 4 or 5 weeks, and depending on how long they wanted the
116 series of workshops to be planned, which I always tried to tie back
117 to their school or classroom curriculum. That wasn't necessarily
118 the case with a lot of arts. The stuff that I did never had a
119 performance outcome. A lot of artists-in-residence had you know:
120 "we've had a visual artist so we have to have an exhibition" or
121 "we've had an actor here so we have to have a performance".
122 Mine was simply about exposure to process. It wasn't about
123 creating an extravaganza.
124

125 Su-Lin: You mentioned you teach 11 hours a week. How is that broken
126 down?
127

128 Jenny: That's interesting. Up until the end of Term 1 which was the
129 Easter holidays, I taught all the classes; Years 5 through to Year 7.
130 There are 11 classes here. The time-table allows 45 minute
131 lessons. What happened at the end of Term 1 is that the Year 5s
132 might not do drama till the end of the year because music sucks up
133 an additional period. This school has a very strong music focus. So
134 what happens is that now some of the Year 7s have 2 periods a
135 week. Which is fantastic because they are the kids which have a
136 lot of skills under their belt. So it works out roughly that the Year
137 5s and 6s have a 45 min. lesson a week, Year 7s have 2 45 min.
138 lessons a week.

139 Su-Lin: How would you describe the students here generally?
140
141 Jenny: Well, it's a school that caters for boys from Years 5 – 12. I don't
142 have a lot to do with the secondary. Generally, because it's a
143 Catholic Independent School, you have a variety of different
144 backgrounds here; both culturally and socio-economic. The fees in
145 this school are not as high as in other Catholic Independent
146 schools so a lot of parents find it an attractive option. And that's
147 part of the Augustine educational philosophy. So you have a
148 mixture of socio-economic and cultural groups although
149 predominantly I would say the majority of boys come from Italian
150 backgrounds; being a Catholic school, and predominantly Anglo-
151 Saxon. There are a few from Asian backgrounds. You have good
152 years and bad years, and like every other school, there are
153 problems here and there but overall, it's an average school.
154
155 Su-Lin: Let's talk about the drama syllabus. It started off as a guide,
156 *Drama Makes Meaning*?
157
158 Jenny: What happened was prior to 1990 in primary schools, drama was
159 under the umbrella of the English curriculum. And it was under
160 the umbrella in terms of oracy and speech. So we learnt to speak
161 very well and say poetry very well. And that was basically drama,
162 and it was about performance, reading plays about the class. And
163 then in 1990, Debbie Wall was called into the Dept. of Education
164 to write the drama curriculum guide. This came under the new
165 framework in the Dept. of Education which was called the P-10
166 curriculum where they were looking at developing a sequentially
167 developed syllabus spanning Years 1 – 10 but didn't quite
168 eventuate at that time. So that was launched in 1992 and that was
169 the first time that primary teachers had in a book some kind of
170 sequential development about how drama should be taught.
171
172 Su-Lin: Was this to be done in a period of its own, or
173
174 Jenny: It's hard to say. I can only speak from my own experience. I
175 taught it in an integral way so my drama work was used in social
176 studies, in teaching science, so the kids were marking meta-
177 cognitive links across the curriculum. In some schools, they were
178 fortunate in that they still had the speech and drama specialists
179 who came in and did Trinity College stuff so they had their own
180 period. It was taught in a variety of different ways with no one
181 model. It was never mandated. So after that, came along the Dance
182 Guide and the Media Guide and the revising of the arts syllabus
183 because in Queensland at this time, the only mandated syllabus
184 were Music and Visual Art. So yes, there was a guide, and that
185 guide has been around and teachers have used it, serviced it, made
186 videos about it, we did all sorts of stuff. And then 3 years ago,

187 there was the creation of the Queensland School Curriculum
 188 Council which was to build on the 8 Key Learning Areas. And that
 189 was when the syllabus, the Years 1 – 10 in drama and the arts was
 190 starting to be developed.
 191

192 Su-Lin: So with the *Drama Makes Meaning* Guide, it would be the English
 193 teacher using it?
 194

195 Jenny: Well, in primary school you don't have an English teacher. You
 196 have a teacher that teaches all subjects so they have the class for 6
 197 hours a day and they teach everything. That's in general primary
 198 schools. In this school, they have teachers that rotate around
 199 because we work on building boys up to be ready for the
 200 secondary model where they move around to different teachers.
 201

202 Su-Lin: So with the new drama syllabus which you are also involved in,
 203 why was it written, and what do you think are the differences, and
 204 the benefits or shortcomings?
 205

206 Jenny: It was written because the government had mandated that schools
 207 had to teach the 8 Key Learning Areas and they suddenly realized
 208 that there was no syllabus particularly in the areas of the Arts,
 209 Science and the Study of Society and the Environment. So they
 210 then had to create the syllabus to support the teachers. The thing
 211 about the drama strand in the syllabus, it builds directly upon what
 212 *Drama Makes Meaning* was doing; not the content but the
 213 processes. What has been good about the re-writing of the drama
 214 strand was that it was done collaboratively with teachers across
 215 the state; so it's not our vision but the drama teachers in
 216 Queensland's vision which is why it is being embraced so whole-
 217 heartedly.
 218

219 The thing that was layered on top of that was that for the first time,
 220 on a piece of paper, it said, by the end of Year 1, or the end of
 221 Year 3, or the end of Year 7, these students should be able to do
 222 this, this, this, this. So suddenly there were benchmarks, and I hate
 223 to call them that, but that's what they are. It gives teachers an
 224 understanding of what sorts of skills, processes, attitudes, and
 225 knowledge to provide opportunities to students that they can count
 226 on. So that's its great strength; that it very clearly lays out what
 227 students need to demonstrate that they know and can do. The old
 228 syllabus didn't; it wasn't clear. It didn't say in Year 5, you need to
 229 teach these elements of drama. It just said we teach the elements
 230 of drama whereas what we've done is that we've pulled all the
 231 conventions, all the elements, ... drama doesn't really have
 232 content, we draw on other curriculum areas for content but it has
 233 content in that you need to know certain terminology. So we
 234 pulled all that apart and said what can kids do at each level? So

235 it's the first time that that has ever happened.
 236
 237 And for me personally, someone who has been teaching in
 238 primary schools for 15 years, it has completely changed my
 239 teaching. Even as a writer of the syllabus, and even now,
 240 implementing it, it has made the clarity of my lessons much
 241 stronger. It has made me sit down and clearly plan what the
 242 students are going to do whereas before it was: "oh, well, I might
 243 do this story drama or I might do a mask unit" but now I have to
 244 go further and say, I have to teach these skills so that when the
 245 boys get to Year 8, they are at this level. And that's fantastic. That
 246 might not be the same for all teachers in the state and from a
 247 personal point of view, I think that a lot of primary teachers are
 248 going to have a lot of difficulty with the arts syllabus in general,
 249 because they might never have been taught it themselves, or the
 250 resources are not clear, or they don't have the confidence. You've
 251 got to be pretty brave to do drama because most of the time you
 252 have to step down from that authorial position and give the
 253 authority to the kids.
 254
 255 Su-Lin: How does the QSCC deal with that?
 256
 257 Jenny: The QSCC is in a very funny position. It's position is that it is the
 258 writer and creator of the syllabus but it's not responsible for
 259 implementation. Once the syllabus is endorsed by the government,
 260 then it is up to the educational authorities. So the Independent
 261 schools association, Catholic education, and Education
 262 Queensland decide on whether they want to implement it or not.
 263 At the moment it's all very glowing; we've got a new syllabus,
 264 and it's all happening, and it's going to be released in September,
 265 and we're going to be able to use it. But the government might
 266 decide that because of their monetary position, that they're not
 267 going to mandate that all 5 artforms of the syllabus need to be
 268 taught. We might go back to the status quo where it's music and
 269 visual art because all the resources are already in place.
 270
 271 So we all sound really hopeful but at the back of my mind, we
 272 might only go back to the model that we've got at the moment
 273 which is, if you want to teach drama, teach it but you don't have
 274 to. So we don't know what's going to happen until the syllabus is
 275 endorsed by the government in September, and until they decide to
 276 mandate it. But regardless of what happens, I think a lot of
 277 primary teachers will still use that syllabus in terms of informing
 278 their teaching methodology and planning, which can only be good
 279 for drama.
 280
 281 Su-Lin: When you mention that you, Debbie Wall, Sue Davis and yourself
 282 consulted the various schools, was it to share the syllabus?

283 Jenny: Yes. It was an interesting process. QADIE won the tender. What
 284 we had to do was various groups of people had to tender to see
 285 who would be the writers of the syllabus. And it just so happened
 286 that all the professional associations that supported the different
 287 art forms won the tender in each of their area. So QADIE won the
 288 tender to write the syllabus. It was Sue, Debbie and myself who
 289 put in that tender on behalf of QADIE but QADIE endorsed us.
 290 Part of our philosophy in writing what we wrote was that there
 291 were a hell of a lot more teachers in Queensland with as much
 292 experience as the 3 of us have and we really felt that we had to
 293 include them in some way.
 294
 295 So what we did was the 3 of us sat down for a couple of weeks
 296 and went through *Drama Makes Meaning*, the other syllabuses
 297 from other countries, and we created what we thought was the
 298 starting point. After that we had a reference group that was
 299 predominantly Brisbane based and people who could travel, so
 300 from the Sunshine Coast, Gold Coast and we came together over
 301 the September holidays. We worked together for a week, and we
 302 broke people up into their specialist areas. So all the primary
 303 people worked together, all the secondary, all the tertiary,
 304 whatever, and they then looked at what we had done and then gave
 305 us more ideas and started re-working, and started re-wording.
 306
 307 Once we had that, we put in an expression of interest on the
 308 QADIE egroup and on the website for interested people who
 309 wanted to be involved in the process but couldn't because of the
 310 distance. So we had what we called the corresponding reference
 311 group. So whenever we finished some work, we photocopied it
 312 and sent it out to all the stakeholders. It was huge, and it cost so
 313 much money for QADIE to do it. Other art forms didn't do it.
 314 They just had their 3 people and they wrote it. And it was
 315 interesting to see the response to what we had created and what
 316 the other art forms had done and the teachers in Queensland really
 317 feel like they have a stake in this syllabus. We kept putting it up
 318 online so people could get in and modify, and talk about it. It took
 319 hours and hours of concentration but in the end, that whole
 320 process has been really productive in that teachers now want to
 321 use it because they can see that what they have said has now been
 322 taken on board.
 323
 324 Su-Lin: So these teachers were primary teachers ...
 325
 326 Jenny: Yes, and secondary teachers because the syllabus spans Years 1 –
 327 10. So Years 1 – 7 primary, and years 8 – 10 secondary. But we
 328 also pulled in people who worked in specialist schools, people
 329 who worked with children who were intellectually handicapped,
 330 people who worked in gender equity, people who worked

331 specifically in Aboriginal and Torres Straits education, so we tried
 332 to be inclusive of as many groups as we possibly could. We
 333 handpicked teachers that we knew who were working in the art
 334 form that had possibly presented at a QADIE conference, had
 335 written stuff in journals. So they were confident enough in their
 336 practice to look at ours to go: "oh that's rubbish".
 337

338 Su-Lin: Could you venture a figure on how many teachers in primary
 339 school who actually use drama?
 340

341 Jenny: That is such an unknown. It's the degree of drama too. Whether
 342 they are preparing an assembly item, and that might be their
 343 students' one off experience with drama. Does that count as being
 344 a teacher of drama in primary school? I think not. Or you go to the
 345 other extreme where you've got a teacher like myself, that teaches
 346 all their curriculum through drama, both as a teaching
 347 methodology and as an art form. It's really hard to say. I would
 348 figure that you're probably looking at a tenth, two-tenths of the
 349 population teaching drama in primary schools. None of the
 350 teachers here use drama although this year has been interesting as
 351 some of the teachers have been approaching me for drama
 352 activities they can use in their classrooms. So that's beginning to
 353 come in although it's at a fairly low-level. But the numbers are
 354 hard to tell. I mean at the Association, we have about 400
 355 members, probably about 56 of those members are primary.
 356

357 Su-Lin: You teach part-time at this school. Do you think that has any
 358 benefits? Do you face any challenges teaching at this school?
 359

360 Jenny: One of the models that I think might be used is someone like me
 361 because if schools can afford to bring in someone in a specialist
 362 area to teach drama as part of the curriculum, they'll do it. And
 363 maybe because it'll save teachers a lot of heartache. I think
 364 another model they might use is to look at their staff and say, well,
 365 there are 3 people on our staff who are interested in drama, or who
 366 have taught drama; maybe they can rotate around the classrooms
 367 while their classes are at PE or music or whatever. So I think that
 368 might happen, as well as ordinary classroom teachers doing it.
 369

370 So ... yes, the unique position of this school is that it is lucky
 371 enough and has the extended history of someone teaching it. It
 372 used to be speech and then it became speech and drama, and now
 373 I've had to re-educate my students to just call it drama. But
 374 everybody knows about drama now. The challenges I have here is
 375 two-fold: there is a space issue. There is no one dedicated space
 376 for drama in this school. So I rotate from an art room, a music
 377 room and a general purpose space. The other issue is the re-
 378 education of the staff and particularly, the admin. about what

379 drama is. Their previous experience with drama is doing an annual
 380 concert with 324 boys on stage which is almost a physical
 381 impossibility. These boys had no knowledge of process and were
 382 being yelled at to do their thing and then get off. What I did was to
 383 use their classroom work and we re-worked it. And I tried to re-
 384 educate them to not do a concert but that we were actually doing
 385 classroom presentations.
 386

387 We're going to have that in a couple of weeks and I am hoping the
 388 teachers will see how easy it is to do that; do a presentation of 20
 389 minutes each and then go home rather than ... it took us 13 weeks
 390 of rehearsals of out of class time, out of school time, rehearsing in
 391 the evening, hours and hours to do a concert. So there's a whole
 392 re-education process still going on. The other thing that is very
 393 important to this school is assessment and evaluation. And the
 394 parents want to see something or outcomes and rightly so but it's
 395 difficult when you are doing something that is process-based and
 396 not product-oriented.
 397

398 Su-Lin: Do you think the new syllabus will ease that?
 399

400 Jenny: Yes, we're reporting on what the kids can do, not what they can't
 401 do which is what a report card is about. Usually, traditionally a
 402 report card tells you what the kids didn't achieve, not what they
 403 did. The outcomes approach with the syllabus encourages teachers
 404 to report not only to parents but also to the kids themselves for the
 405 first time about what they can do, not what they can't do. So it's
 406 couched in very positivist language. I think the problem in primary
 407 schools is how do you report on 5 outcomes that have possibly 15
 408 outcomes over a 2 year period. I think that's going to be one of the
 409 biggest hurdles we will have to overcome. At this school, the
 410 administration has said that they are not going to use an outcomes
 411 approach to education. We can use the new syllabus but I still
 412 have to give the boys marks out of 1 – 5 and use a rating system
 413 on their report card. So that's going to be a huge re-education for
 414 parents. Because they understand an A or B but not an outcome
 415 like: "this student has managed the elements of drama really well."
 416 What does that mean in the real world?
 417

418 Su-Lin: You're a specialist teacher. Do you know if schools still bring in
 419 artists from the community to do a project or program?
 420

421 Jenny: Yes. I've just done one here. The piece that we did for the state
 422 conference was done outside of school hours and I brought an
 423 artist in and we co-devised a piece. So that is still used ... well, I
 424 still use it. But a lot of schools find it easy to bring in a dance, or
 425 drama or visual arts and say we've done drama, we've done dance,
 426 etc. and it's outside of school hours. That's the usual, and I think

427 that will continue.
428

429 Su-Lin: Do you know whether any co-planning or co-teaching takes place
430 or does the artist very much take over?
431

432 Jenny: I think it works on the model where teachers think, "I've got a free
433 period" and from my experience, I think there's not a lot of
434 interaction between the artist and the teacher.
435

436 Su-Lin: When you plan the syllabus here, do you work with other teachers
437 in terms of the content?
438

439 Jenny: No. When I first came here I tried to go round and see what the
440 teachers were doing, particularly in English, Social Studies, and
441 Science because that's where you can draw good stuff from for
442 drama and it just didn't work because I had to plan 11 different
443 units; and I just .. my head got muddled and so I had to make a
444 decision in term 2 which goes against what I believe about drama
445 being integrated in the curriculum. I just had to set up a Year 5,
446 Year 6 and Year 7 program and work outside of what they were
447 doing in the classroom. Nothing I could do about it.
448

449 Jenny: When I got to this school, I felt it was rather unusual that you
450 didn't see parents in classrooms here. In most primary schools in
451 Queensland, they encourage parents to be part of their children's
452 education where they come in and do reading groups or to come in
453 and help with art. And when I worked in a Primary school, the
454 parents were in my room all the time. Here, it's pretty much a
455 closed door unless they are invited. But when you do request for
456 help, they come forward like when I did the presentation at the
457 Brisbane Powerhouse. They like to be involved that way but not
458 directly in the classroom. But they are all very supportive of
459 drama.
460

461 Su-Lin: So you didn't have to do any re-education in terms of the parents?
462

463 Jenny: No. I think that's done by the boys. Well, I know because parents
464 come talk to me in the car park or at the shopping center or
465 something. They go home and talk about what they've done in
466 drama and from what I can tell, it's very different from what
467 they've done before. So I think the re-education in drama has
468 happened in terms of the boys' conversations with their parents at
469 home. Sometimes I do send notes home and the tone I adopt is
470 very friendly and open so I think they've got a warm, fuzzy
471 feeling about drama from both my communication and the boys'
472 communication.
473

474 Su-Lin: So parents actually get an opportunity to get in touch with you?

475 Jenny: Yes. They either ring me or turn up at the end of the day. I've
 476 never been asked to attend a Parent-Teacher meeting at the
 477 beginning of the year. I'd be quite happy to do but I've never been
 478 asked.
 479

480 Su-Lin: Are all the various productions like the Passion Play, and the
 481 Presentation at the QADIE Conference done outside of curriculum
 482 time?
 483

484 Jenny: They used to be. They used to require the boys to come for
 485 Sunday rehearsals, after-school rehearsals, and my philosophy is
 486 that if you are going to value a subject area, then it's got to be
 487 done during school time. So I changed the whole structure about
 488 how that was going to happen. It was all done during school hours,
 489 there were only 2 days for the concert where there was a complete
 490 disruption to the school time-table, everything else was done in
 491 their drama class. So whether it's a production or class work that's
 492 going to become a production, it's in class time so that it is seen as
 493 a valuable part of the curriculum. Because I see no point in
 494 creating things that doesn't come out of the kids' class work.
 495

496 Su-Lin: Does this school have a counselor or educational psychologist?
 497

498 Jenny: When I got here, behavior in drama classes was appalling.
 499 Absolutely appalling. And I think it was because of the model the
 500 boys were used to working. And also because drama is the only
 501 subject they do that doesn't require them to sit behind a desk. So
 502 suddenly they have all this freedom and they don't know what to
 503 do with it. So it's taken me 18 months to get some boys to realize
 504 that drama is like any other subject that you listen, and all that. As
 505 for significant behavioral problems, there were a couple of boys,
 506 well, not a couple, quite a few boys who are ADD, ADA and are
 507 on medication, and some are off medication. And in drama, in a
 508 non-structured environment in terms of the physical environment
 509 but where the lessons are structured; when they get into a non-
 510 structured environment, they just go haywire. So we do have both,
 511 a school counselor and an educational psychologist on staff that
 512 we can refer the boys to.

Appendix A: 2

Interview with Donna

HOD, Performing Arts, Springvale State High School

27 April 2001 & 16 May 2001

1 Su-Lin: Why did you decide to become a drama teacher?

2

3 Donna: I decided to become a teacher in about Grade 6, and it's
4 because I really respected my teachers, and I thought it
5 would be a really inspiring job to work with students. At the
6 end of Grade 10, I decided to further that decision and I
7 decided I wanted to be a High School teacher as I found a
8 High School teacher to be more challenging, and more
9 varied. And at one stage I was going to become an
10 accounting teacher because I did like the business side of
11 things as well but I chose to become an art and drama
12 teacher. So art's my major area and drama is my second
13 teaching area but I became the drama and dance
14 coordinator at my previous school, and I've held this current
15 position as Head of the Performing Arts for the last couple
16 of years.

17

18 Su-Lin: And you've been teaching for

19

20 Donna: 18 years.

21

22 Su-Lin: It hasn't always been in drama?

23

24 Donna: Yes. I've always taught some drama but up until about 3 years
25 ago, it was always a balance of art and drama; so I might have
26 3 art classes and 3 drama classes. I used to teach theatre as
27 well because that was originally a syllabus for Year 11 and 12.
28 So we used to teach Theatre and Speech and Drama, and then
29 the Board of Senior Secondary School Studies decided there
30 was a lot of overlap so they produced what we now know as
31 Senior Drama.

32

33 Su-Lin: So would any of these students have done Speech and Drama?

34

35 Donna: No. Some of the students that you saw today would have
36 studied drama from Grade 8 up to 12. Others would have

37 taken it in Year 8, probably decided it was not their choice
38 for Junior and then they've re-chosen the subject for Senior.
39 Those students though, I personally feel find it more difficult
40 to get through to the Grade 11 standard because they have
41 missed 2 years of fairly intense process work. It's not to say
42 that they can't get to a certain standard, but I think some of
43 them find it more difficult and they need more teacher direction
44 more rehearsal time, perhaps extra tuition. So I think you can
45 tell the difference between those students who have had a
46 continual learning of the subject as opposed to those who
47 haven't had a continual learning and it's been stop start stop
48 start. Drama is a developmental subject and students build on
49 their skills.

50

51 Su-Lin: Why did you decide to go into the arts?

52

53 Donna: I've always loved performing, so my passions in life are live
54 theatre, music and drawing and I guess .. I received the
55 academic award for art in school ...I didn't study drama at
56 school; it wasn't a subject offered in my school but I did drama
57 privately outside of school and I was in the vocal choir and
58 things like that. So I guess you could say I was into
59 performing and when I chose secondary teaching, art and we
60 had to choose a second teaching area, I just thought I didn't
61 want to teach English, or Math or PE and drama was so
62 energised and seemed to be fun as well as academic, and it
63 seemed to offer everything. So when I went for the induction
64 day and we had to choose our second teaching area, what I
65 saw in the offer and what was being offered in the units seemed
66 to be what I wanted to do, which I didn't get to do previously.

67

68 Su-Lin: Did you actually do your teacher training at QUT?

69

70 Donna: Yes, I did my diploma in teaching and graduated in 1984 with
71 a diploma in art and drama teaching, and then 18 eighteen
72 later I started my Bachelor of Education at QUT as well;
73 part-time. I graduated in 1997, and then I did my Masters in
74 Education at the University of Queensland in Curriculum in the
75 Arts or the Arts in the Curriculum.

76

77 Su-Lin: You mentioned just now that drama had everything. Could
78 you please explain that?

79 Donna: Ok. I'm a bit biased now because I teach it, but to me, drama
80 is a very complete subject and to me, it not only offers
81 students the opportunity to form, it also gives them a certain
82 amount of skills for the outside world. To me it's a very
83 energised subject. The students are in a practical-based subject
84 but they also do theory but they come in energised, ready to
85 'rock-and-roll'. They don't sit at desks, they don't necessarily
86 use textbooks in class-time. So it's .. that's why I call it a very
87 complete subject. It offers so many dimensions - from writing,
88 to forming, analysing characters, analysing people in the streets
89 ... you've got the backstage side of it, the lighting and sound
90 effects, we look at the role of the director, we write scripts,
91 watch screen adaptations of live theatre, we go to the live
92 theatre, and it just offers SO much and I don't think there are
93 many other subjects that come into line with what drama offers
94

95 Su-Lin: You mentioned earlier about drama contributing to skills that
96 would help them in the workplace. Could you just elaborate
97 on that.
98

99 Donna: Definitely. We've had a lot of students wanting to do drama in
100 Year 9 because they think it's going to help their self-esteem,
101 confidence, thinking skills, deportment and posture, and we
102 take a lot of our skills to the Junior and Primary but basically
103 I think because we deal with a lot of real world issues, in terms
104 of content, especially when we do political theatre and when
105 they write scripts they look at issues. So even though it's
106 drama, we're always analysing, or criticising or looking at a
107 world issue, or something that is happening in the world -
108 pollution, or the environment, or the GST, peer pressure,
109 bullying; whatever's happening in the school itself or schools
110 in Queensland.
111

112 So I think because they have so many opportunities to examine
113 so many issues and people, and they play so many characters
114 themselves; they get to look at a lot of different careers within
115 drama as well, I just think it pays off when they reach Year 12.
116 Even if they are not going to pursue drama, whether it be
117 directing or backstage or whatever, I think you'll find that they're
118 the ones who are more confident, they'll stick up for themselves
119 more, they'll dress better, they'll have better posture, they'll
120 be do-ers, not sit-ters, active people of the community willing

121 to do a lot for little because it's the scenario of having to do
122 fund-raising, you've got to find your people, and there are the
123 shows and you've got to make your props and costumes -
124 you need a lot of energy to survive theatre; so I think they're
125 used to doing that and generally a good community member.
126

127 Su-Lin: What are some of the outcomes you would like to see in a
128 drama programme? What are your expectations of the
129 students when they graduate?
130

131 Donna: At the end of Year 12, I would hope that they are extremely
132 confident people, that they have high self-esteem, that they
133 respect others, that they have the ability to work well in a team
134 as well as individually, that they have a passion to want to do
135 better and strive for success in whatever they want to do, that
136 they have brilliant communication skills, that they will also
137 continue to promote the arts within the family, workplace,
138 community. We have a lot of ex students come back. They
139 give us feedback on the courses they're studying, or if they've
140 gone into the workforce, they come and often share with us
141 what they're doing. We get students who come back and thank
142 us for what we did for them. They will keep in touch with their
143 progress I suppose. The students who aspire to succeed in
144 drama or one of the performing or visual arts tend to go onto
145 University, or a course, as opposed to ones who are doing a
146 subject like drama purely for their confidence-building and
147 self-esteem building or just because they enjoy making drama.
148

149 Su-Lin: What is your understanding of the term aesthetic education
150 because I know that's a term that's used here.
151

152 Donna: I think aesthetic education is, one: appealing to students; not
153 purely content based and assessment-driven, there are other
154 parameters circling the subject itself that attract students to
155 want to do that topic of study.
156

157 Su-Lin: Do you use that term with the students here?
158

159 Donna: Not so much. Like I wouldn't use it daily or weekly but I try
160 to ... I do encourage them to broaden their language skills.
161 Because unless they do a lot of reading which they don't
162 because they do a lot of watching these days, they're not getting

163 that rich language so that's a term we use a lot when we teach
164 Shakespeare; the difference between rich and strong language,
165 so that might be when we look at terms like the aesthetics of
166 education or the aesthetics of the room, like lighting, sets, has
167 it got value? And that is another term I would line with
168 aesthetics; and that it's not only valued by them but the society
169 that we're living in ... so rather than use such terminology or
170 jargon sometimes; it tends to be heavy for 16 and 17 year olds,
171 ... I get students to reflect on a unit after their completed study
172 and what were their strengths and weaknesses, did you enjoy
173 the task work, did you find them challenging enough, so they
174 give me feed-back as well and that's when I will talk to them
175 about the value of the unit, if it's worthy of them staying in
176 the programme or should I replace it with something else.

177
178 So I ensure that they are aware of what it is because I ask
179 them whether what they did was of value to them, was it
180 meaningful and was it eclectic. And if it wasn't, then I'd take
181 it out basically or re-structure the task. I don't keep using the
182 same tasks every year. We'd sort of re-word them, pull them
183 apart and put it back together. It ends up being a similar task
184 but with richer language or we make it more challenging or if
185 it's too challenging, then bringing it back a bit.

186
187 Su-Lin: So when you're planning the work programme, do you plan it
188 with the other teachers as well?

189
190 Donna: Yes, it's a collaborative process.

191
192 Su-Lin: Do you draw on themes that the students might throw up

193
194 Donna: Yes.

195
196 Su-Lin: And then the assessment takes place continually, and this
197 then feeds back into the planning process?

198
199 Donna: Yes, that's right.

200
201 Su-Lin: So how often does assessment take place with the students?

202
203 Donna: At the end of every unit. I want the students to be part of the
204 learning-teaching partnership; for me as well as for them

205 because for the teaching-learning process to be highly effective,
206 which is where we should be aiming, together with the students
207 too, have to be a partnership and the students have to have
208 ownership of the programme and the whole learning process
209 as well, which is why I encourage them to give as much
210 feedback as possible. There's no point in a group of adults
211 writing these units thinking they know the students because
212 they have no input, they think they might want to study political
213 theatre but they might not want to.

214

215 Su-Lin: Well, I know you haven't used the word creativity but what's
216 your take on that? Do you see it fitting in with drama?

217

218 Donna: Oh yes, definitely. I think creativity is part of your personality,
219 to be creative, I think. I think of myself as being a highly
220 creative person, being involved in visual and performing arts,
221 not only in education but personal pursuits and so forth. I think
222 every student is creative but there's lot of difference in being
223 creative in performance as opposed to being creative by
224 inventing something, perhaps or working out a mathematical
225 problem. I'm sure you still do that in a creative process but I
226 don't ... I think there again, I say the arts; visual and performing
227 and the languages would allow the students to be a lot more
228 creative than perhaps more text-book driven subjects. Not to
229 say they can't be creative; I'm sure they are creative in
230 technology and that kind of stuff, and they nurture skills too
231 but when you actually see kids get up and perform on stage for
232 people, and not even so much a big stage but a performance
233 space, be it like dancing, playing the cello, doing a Shakespeare
234 monologue ... I think it goes a little bit .. it goes into cutting-
235 edge creativity.

236

237 And in the 21st century now, we can, I mean we've come
238 such a long way since I started teaching with what we can
239 even do in a classroom; content-wise and also technology-wise
240 and also just how much is out there and the students are
241 struggling to improve that I think ... I think creativity has come
242 a long way. So students are being more creative because of
243 technology and the improvement of the arts in industry ...
244 things like the new Powerhouse in Brisbane, we've got the
245 Lyric Theatre, the Entertainment Centre. I mean they're all very
246 vital in the arts and when the students see that that's all

247 happening and it's part of like the average person's life now
248 and that people can go and see a 'live' performance when 20
249 years ago it was probably ... it was a very privileged
250 experience; one due to costs and two due to attitudes because
251 a lot of people thought the arts were snobby things in Australia
252 whereas now you get even the non-wealthy going to the Lyric.
253

254 Su-Lin: You mentioned how things have changed in education. Do you
255 feel that as an educator, that you are connected to your
256 students; to this generation or is there a gap?
257

258 Donna: I personally think I've got a gap because .. of my age I suppose
259 Because I didn't grow up on computers in school and I'm not
260 OLD but I didn't grow up with computers at school. All my
261 University assignments are hand-written till I did my Masters
262 but that was the early nineties. I'm not very comfortable with
263 working with a lot of computerised equipment at this point
263 but I know because of the area I teach in, I'm almost forced to
265 learn more. So it's definitely on my agenda to learn more and
266 be computer literate and to get a complete understanding of
267 digital equipment and how to design webpages and things like
268 that.
269

270 It's scary when you have students who can do a lot more than
271 you can in the technology field but I don't think it's threatening
272 or that I'm less educated than them, it's just that that's what
273 they do now ... at Grade 2. They start with computers and can
274 do Power Point ... I think that's fantastic but on the other hand
275 also, I don't necessarily align creativity with technology ...
276 that's something that I would like to explore because to me I
277 like to hand-draw. If I'm doing like a cover sheet for a book or
278 something, it's very quick and responsive to do a computer
279 created cover sheet with images but you see it everywhere
280 and to me it isn't creative, because I didn't do it with my own
281 hands, like line-block printing for example, where it's a lot
282 more tactile.
283

284 So I'm kind of caught in the middle because I want to do
285 technology more; particularly in lighting and sound effects
286 because we're kind of behind the eight ball at the moment but
287 also wanting to nurture the students that it doesn't all have to
288 be about technology and digital and CD-ROMs and video

289 games and things. That you need to keep in touch with that
290 I call it the human spirit. Like your feelings and those
291 sorts of things, and I think the ultimate would be to have a
292 match with that's happening - new technology and your natural
293 creativity.

294

295 Su-Lin: Can you explain your role to me here at Springvale State. I
296 understand you're Head of Department.

297

298 Donna: Yes, I'm Head of Department for Performing Arts, which
299 means I am in charge of music, drama, dance and media
300 studies. .. And also instrumental music. But I do have co-
301 ordinators within those fields, so I have an instrumental music
302 co-ordinator, and a junior drama co-ordinator. I co-ordinate
303 senior, my 2 dance co-ordinators co-ordinate dance. So we
304 have meetings scheduled so I touch base with all the areas.
305 I teach as well on top of administration and management; I've
306 got 3 classes of drama and the rest of the my time, my non-
307 contact time with students is spent doing budgets, attending to
308 HOD issues, planning the future, taking pre-service teachers
309 ... there's just a huge range of things ... doing purchase orders
310 ... organising rehearsal schedules.

311

312 The other part is spent on extra- curricular programmes; so
313 beyond the teaching side of it and what the students do in the
314 classroom, there's a huge opportunity for them to become
315 involved in lots and lots of cultural activities that are scheduled
316 throughout the year. Things like Awards Night, assembly
317 performances, shopping centre performances, Education Qld
317 launches ... small presentation night performances of their
319 class work to parents, night of dance, we're doing *Rock*
320 *Eisteddfod* this year, a soire in the street, a carnival when the
321 merge happens between the primary and high school. The
322 students have been really good. We've got a Cultural
323 Committee for the first time so there are 2 cultural leaders who
324 go around assembly promoting things, write articles for the
325 newsletter, go out into the community and promote things, do
326 some marketing for us, sell tickets, fund-raise,

327

328 SL: What's your staff strength like at this Department?

329

330 Donna: I'd say I've got a mix staff of professionals who've worked in

331 their fields, I've got a mixture of age as well so I've got people
332 mid-twenties to people approaching fifties. I've got a mix of ...
333 although not as much of a balance as I would like of male and
334 female. They come from different backgrounds, like 2 of my
335 music teachers went to the Conservatory of Music and one
336 went to QUT; likewise with drama and dance, they both went
337 to QUT. But again they vary in personality, in professional
338 background, in age, in knowledge and content so a lot of
339 sharing happens, across faculties as well, and the good thing
340 is that everyone has their own ideas, and background and
341 learning but sometimes it might not work but I enjoy the times
342 when it does work because sometimes you shut the door too
343 early and do something one way, but the person next to you
344 might think of something else.

345
346 So again, I think we need to do that more - team teach, watch
347 each other teach, because you can just get caught in a cocoon,
348 and live in a very sheltered reality whereas I'm always all-round
349 promoting collaboration, sharing ideas, and I don't have a
350 problem with people watching me teach at all and I'd like to
351 think they don't have problems with me watching them teach
352 because it's not about what are you doing wrong thing, it's a,
353 "oh, that's a good idea".

354
355 Su-Lin: In terms of numbers, how big is the department?
356

357 Donna: I'm actually collating this information for a report, but roughly,
358 we have 4 Year 12 drama classes, that's about 92 students,
359 Year 11's about 80, Year 10's 62, Year 9 is 65, and all Grade
360 8's do drama for 1 semester. So drama numbers would be
361 approximately 300 from Year 9 - 12, and 200 of Year 8s. So
362 we've got 500 students doing drama.

363
364 Su-Lin: In terms of staff numbers for drama and the performing arts?
365

366 Donna: I've got, including myself, there's 11 staff; so I've got 2 dance
367 teachers, 3 music teachers, 3 instrumental music teachers,
368 and there's actually 5 people teaching drama but for 3 this is
369 our focus area.

370
371 Su-Lin: Do you have a separate administrator who helps you with
372 administration stuff?

373 Donna: No.
 374
 375 Su-Lin: And you also do playground duty and other stuff ...
 376
 377 Donna: We also do playground duty, and I have a home group that I'm
 378 called upon to do internal supervision once a week because
 379 I'm on half a load as HOD. I've also got a Line Manager, which
 380 basically means that she meets with me, or with me and the
 381 Principal, and she's my Deputy. So there are 3 Deputy
 382 Principals, and each of the 3 Deputies have attached
 383 themselves to all HODs. And that basically means that if I have
 384 an issue or problem or something I want to do, I go to her and
 385 she is my first port of call. So we meet as much as we can,
 386 or do a lot of conversations on the phone. I have a teacher-aid
 387 for an hour and a half a week, which is a very small amount of
 388 time for the amount of students studying the subject. I mean
 389 there are a lot of menial tasks we need to do ex. sending letters
 390 to parents about this student who has not been coming for 3
 391 weeks ... so there are some tedious tasks that we all need to
 392 do that could possibly be done by someone else.
 393
 394 So given the size of the department, it certainly deserves a
 395 teacher-aid full-time on staff and next year I think I would even
 396 like to have more assistance on the cultural side of things.
 397 And we're trying to get our staff involved in the *Rock*
 398 *Eisteddfod* so that it doesn't seem like just the Performing
 399 Arts and it can be a whole school thing and that's one area
 400 I want to look into more; ensuring that other staff can be
 401 involved, that we're not an isolated team of highly creative
 402 people who aren't willing to let others share and work with us
 403 so ... it's starting to work, like we've got a few teachers
 404 working with us for *Rock Eisteddfod* so I think it's starting to
 405 grow.
 406
 407 Su-Lin: Well obviously your department is very close but do all of you
 408 get along? Because I understand that traditionally music and
 409 visual art were the 2 ...
 410
 411 Donna: Yes, they were the 2 arts which were traditionally taught in
 412 Queensland. Pretty much that's still the case in primary
 413 schools. That's changing but pretty much they've come a long
 414 way but in primary the focus will be on music and art. They

415 do ... I know Kelvin Grove State School gets an instrumental
416 music teacher in to teach their students individually; instrument
417 they do music and they do art and they've also got Kite Theatre
418 based there. So they're a little bit unique in that they promote
419 the arts and they've also got partnerships where they take their
420 students over to the QUT dance studios where they do things
421 as well. So that's pretty good for a primary sch. As far as
422 getting on, because we are performers, I guess we all have
423 quite high self-esteems and confidence, and we're all skilled
424 in our areas. I couldn't say that we get along all the time, there
425 are some periods of unsettlement but it might be a case where
426 people just need some sitting down, it might be a case where
427 we'll all just to busy to sit down and de-brief. In general, we do
428 pull together as a team and have common goals. If they have a
429 problem they'll come to me, and then it's up to me to solve
430 that problem.

431
432 Su-Lin: Are the cultural activities the students do outside of curriculum
433 time called clubs here?

434
435 Donna: We do have .. one of our music teachers does drama as well
436 and she started up a junior drama club who meet one
437 afternoon a week and one lunch hour, one of my dance
438 teachers auditioned dance students from one level and chose
439 11 to become our dance performance group and they meet
440 every Tuesday afternoon for an hour and a half and they
441 choreograph pieces that we will have ready when we are
442 invited to perform. So there are groups like that; specific
443 groups. There's an instrumental music support group who meet
444 once a month with their parents, we've set up a support group
445 of parents and students for the *Rock Eisteddfod* as well.

446
447 So there are ... but they might not carry over to the next year
448 all the time but some of them like the Drama Club took off
449 last year and it's just growing and growing. There's a lot of
450 opportunity to create more but it depends on the clientele.
451 Like if we get 25 students who enrol who are great at clowning
452 we probably will form a comedy club, you know what I mean.
453 It sort of goes on what you get in and because Springvale
454 has 66 feeder schools so 66 primary schools are represented
455 here in Grade 8, so they come from everywhere, and a high
456 percentage of Year 11s don't come from around here. And

457 they're prepared to travel to come and do the arts. So given
 458 that too, we've always got new clientele so depending on what
 459 their focus is, and what they're background's been, the skills
 460 they bring, and sometimes what their parents' skills are as well,
 461 that then dictates to us what to establish as new programmes.
 462

463 Su-Lin: In Singapore, the students actually get points for their extra-
 464 curricular activities. Do students here get points?
 465

466 Donna: No. We don't have points but what they do is get awards on
 467 Awards Night. So they can nominate themselves for Cultural
 468 Award, Service Award, a Leadership Award, those sorts of
 469 things and they'll list what they've done to fulfill the criteria and
 470 as long as they get the majority of their teachers' verification,
 471 then they will get the award. But you've given me an idea with
 472 the points, because it'll probably encourage them to commit
 473 more. Yeah. Compete against each other a little bit.
 474

475 Su-Lin: You obviously have a very supportive Principal.
 476

477 Donna: Yes. Ever since my arrival we've had a very positive
 478 relationship; there have been issues of concern but I've always
 479 had very positive support, and I'm positive that this facility will
 480 eventuate (new performing arts block) and that we will get as
 481 much as we can within the budget, and the fact that we're
 482 showcasing the school so much, for ex. we're doing 3
 483 performances in 3 different venues for Education Week - dance
 484 drama and music; things like that the Principal recognises,
 485 and when the thank-you letters come from Arts Queensland, or
 486 the Premier, or other areas in in the government, that also helps
 487

488 Su-Lin: Would you say the other teachers who don't do the arts are
 489 supportive as well? Do you think they understand what the
 490 department is doing?
 491

492 Donna: They're definitely supportive but an example would be
 493 when we showcase for assemblies, and the teachers pop in
 494 as well and they always give feedback. We generally get good
 495 support at functions but because everybody is so busy with
 496 New Basics P1-12 and other general issues, we don't get a
 497 lot of teacher support for other events like for example, the
 498 *Rock Eisteddfod*. We've probably got 5 or 6 staff helping out

499 of 87 which is quite poor but I don't take it as a negative
500 because look at what other areas they are doing; it's not
501 presenting, it's not performing but different faculties have
502 different focus areas so people are writing work programmes
503 or planning other programmes for their faculty. So that is okay
504 with me. I would imagine that some staff of the school would
505 think that we're being favored but that's not the truth and we're
506 just being targeted as a key area because we are a key area
507 and I have 850 students doing performing arts and 1200 that
508 includes Year 8s but the fact of the matter is that they are
509 popular at the senior school and the junior school so what
510 goes on here has been recognised; the history of our success
511 with the students is being recognised, and the fact that a lot
512 of the performing arts staff dictate what happens in the rest
513 of the school and the arts is definitely an energy base within
514 the school.

515
516 Su-Lin: So you don't face any difficulty from the administration or
517 time-tabling

518
519 Donna: No, we don't. The biggest time-tabling issue we face is space;
520 finding enough spaces for teaching but no one is really
521 teaching out of their area like on a half-load

522
523 Su-Lin: How do performances for assembly work here?

524
525 Donna: We try to have assemblies for all the 4 levels and have all the
526 1200 students together and most fortnights we are asked to
527 showcase something, be it vocal, instrumental, dance or acting
528 ... so we try and balance the 3 areas and the QUT students
529 also perform so ... the positive response that I've actually got
530 from the other faculties is that they actually look forward to
531 going for assemblies because the speaking is balanced with
532 the performance base as well and the students, I believe, as
533 do their deputies, their behaviour tends to be better than what
534 I've seen in most schools because they know they're going to
535 be entertained.

536
537 Su-Lin: How do you view your role as a teacher and what's your
538 philosophy for teaching?

539
540 Donna: My philosophy for teaching is to nurture students and in

541 whatever way I can, also incorporating drama but also beyond
542 that, prepare them for ... life. So I see drama as a life journey
543 anyway, like they can learn so many things from drama but I
544 also lead into my lessons a lot of just content or happenings
545 in the world and also to come to a point at the end of the 2
546 years to have a certain level of skills that I, as a teacher and
547 more importantly, as a drama teacher, have instilled in them.
548 So I take them on a journey, from Year 10 to 11 to 12, and I
549 think that consistency is important to their learning. I think
550 classes that have the same teachers for two years and more
551 is better because you get to know the students more - their
552 histories, their backgrounds, where they want to go, their future
553 futures. So I think my role as teacher goes way beyond content
554 obviously, and I think I'm a role model in imparting life-skills
555 because they have no idea about it at all. And I try to make
556 them aware what it means being an adult; you get different role
557 pressed upon you, you get different rules and regulations.
558

559 Su-Lin: You mentioned previously that some teachers here have former
560 partnerships with QUT. Is it the norm here for teachers to
561 work with artists in the industry?
562

563 Donna: It's not a norm and it hasn't been one in the past. The idea came
564 from the merger that is going to take place with the Junior
565 School and Middle School and High Sch. and also the
566 secondary school and all of us are going to the New Basic.
567 The teachers here have a thought process where we are
568 alongside a University where we do want to channel more
569 students into ... and what can we do to ensure that
570 happens in a formal way rather than just let's wander over.
571 I began discussions with lecturers at QUT last year and so
572 starting small and working towards 2005 and 2010.
573 Partnerships with the Academy of the Arts have started in
574 terms of a project involving 30 dance students from Kelvin
575 Grove and 30 pre-service teachers from QUT, I've taken under
576 me 2 pre-service teachers where previously I might have only
577 taken 1, I'm also looking into starting a mentoring programme
578 in the next couple of years where a couple of my teachers work
579 with a couple of dance/drama pre-service teachers, drama/
580 music teachers so we're working in a 5 people team and the
581 benefit that's got for pre-service teachers is that they're better
582 prepared for the reality of the classroom, the reality of the

583 school, given that they might not be staying in Brisbane as well.
584
585 We've also discussed doing a joint performance at *Out of The*
586 Box for next year. And I've also had at the beginning of the
587 year into term 2, 2 post-graduate students from QUT working
588 with my Year 12's, looking at drama beyond the curriculum,
589 such as 'How the Actor Prepares'; giving them a lot of skills,
590 and that was just like a bonus, and one of them has offered to
591 come back in August to do workshops for 2 afternoons a week
592 So it's happening, it's starting to happen; we're starting to grow
593 and particularly when we get more resources so I believe start
594 small, and then it will grow. Start small so it's more manageable
595 and it will work, and then we'll do things as the years go by.
596
597 Su-Lin: Are there any partnerships between teachers in the Performing
598 Arts Department and the other teachers in the school?
599
600 Donna: Only in terms of the *New Basics* and the 2010 education
601 document and being a Trans-Disciplinary Learning School.
602 There have been meetings between the various departments,
603 including the arts to see how we can integrate our subjects,
604 so we're definitely moving with the times.
605
606 Su-Lin: Do you find pre-service teachers coming in useful?
607
608 Donna: Very useful. The more I can take the better. I don't see them as
609 baggage. I mean you do supervise them and spend time
610 assessing with them, go over their lesson plans with them and
611 all the other things we try and teach them about while they're
612 here but definitely I'm learning a lot about technology from this
613 particular pre-service teacher I have with me now; she's given
614 me new games to play with the drama students and I don't
615 really have the time to go and read books even though I want to.
616 The students like them because they're new, they're fresh,
617 they're energised and they promote the whole subject area as
618 well and basically it's keeping up with what's happening at Uni;
619 what's working, what's not, I've used some of their tasks and
620 incorporated some of their assessment.
621
622 Su-Lin: In terms of teacher training and upgrading of skills, is there a
623 fund teachers can tap into and do you encourage them to go
624 for further training?

625 Donna: Well unfortunately there are 2 sides to that. We call it up-
 626 skilling/professional development. I'm all for it; things are
 627 moving so fast, not just in terms of technology but with the
 628 new drama syllabus out now and just things changing, there
 629 could be a good unit happening at another school which I
 630 would hear about from fellow high school teachers, also
 631 networking with primary school teachers is very rich because
 632 we need to know what they're doing but unfortunately, the
 633 funds are very low. I did put into my budget an allocation for
 634 professional development but it's not a huge pool of money.
 635 The other thing is to release a teacher for any one day costs
 636 the department money so you have to weigh out ... can you
 637 afford to send 2 people, can 1 person go?
 638
 639 I guess for me I ask how beneficial is it going to be for the
 640 students. But up-skilling offers very positive experiences,
 641 positive ways of keeping the enthusiasm and passion going
 642 for teachers because you do network and the best part of doing
 643 professional development is meeting other teachers. I do
 644 believe that if you want to be an excellent teacher, then you
 645 would have to give up some of your own time. So I think as
 646 long as there is balance, and someone from the department
 647 gets to go to something once a year. I'm usually the first port
 648 of call if staff want to go for training and I get the mail so I
 649 circulate information to them but some of my staff belong to
 650 various associations where they get direct information on
 651 courses, conferences, etc.
 652
 653 Su-Lin: You mentioned the importance of networking. Is there an
 654 association of teachers for drama under Education Queensland?
 655
 656 Donna: No. But there is an immense amount of information on the web
 657 There is a website for every school which I could be updating
 658 information each month. Compared to 2 or 3 years ago, we've
 659 been pretty blessed. Like I can access different associations,
 660 different units, like the Drug and Alcohol Unit. We've got
 661 Education Views which comes out every fortnight; that's like
 662 our newsletter. There's a teacher's union and they have a type
 663 of newspaper as well and they're always asking for teachers to
 664 contribute. There's a Board of Teacher Registration newsletter
 665 that we get. So there's heaps of information and that's all
 666 teacher generated as well. I mean Ed Queensland does give

667 assistance; there are a lot of opportunities, you just have to
 668 take them. I mean there are opportunities for me to present
 669 at the QADIE Conference next week, I'm writing a couple of
 670 papers for the QADIE journal ... so there are lots of
 671 opportunities out there and people will start catching you from
 672 what you've put out there and then the network starts-up.
 673
 674 And we're all part of different districts and I go to HOD Cluster
 675 meetings and we meet at least once a term and all the Heads
 676 of the Performing Arts Departments meet and we might look
 677 at the new drama syllabus, what's coming up at year end for
 678 us, you've got to be seen and heard I guess; you've got to be
 679 part of a group. And I'd rather do that than do it all by myself.
 680 I mean why should I create a new unit if someone's written it,
 681 or someone's got an excellent video, or someone's done
 682 Sukuzi training and could come in to help me; so it's not just
 683 about further networking and resourcing as in written, but it's
 684 also about sharing resources and helping each other out, often
 685 workshops without costing money.
 686
 687 Su-Lin: Does the school have a counsellor?
 688
 689 Donna: Yes. We have 2 guidance counsellors here and they see the
 690 students not just about their subjects, but also problems at
 691 home as well. So students need to make an appointment.
 692 There's a police officer here and she works 5 days a week;
 693 from ten to two. She does a lot of education in the classroom,
 694 about traffic liscensing, drugs and alcohol, fines, that sort of
 695 thing. Very approachable and I once did a role-play with her
 696 in process drama as herself. She comes to things like the
 697 semi-formals, open days ... she's very visible and I would say
 698 her presence definitely helps keep the school on-track. If
 699 there's any bad stuff or things like that she's right onto it and
 700 puts up notices, that sort of thing.
 701
 702 We also have a school chaplain who offers prayer one morning
 703 a week and holds lunchtime sessions with students. We have
 704 a school nurse who comes in about 3 times a week and again,
 705 the students know when she's here and they make an
 706 appointment with her. So we don't have a psychologist or
 707 psychiatrist as such; that has been an idea put through by Ed
 708 Qld and they'll probably get to that point by putting some of

709 these people in schools where there is more need. I think a
710 psychologist would be a good personnel to have in such a
711 school; even if one was attached to a couple of schools. I think
712 there is a definite need but it's just a matter of funding at the
713 moment but I've never been to a school where there's not at
714 least a school based police officer, which is becoming more
715 and more popular; a school chaplain, nurse, couple of guidance
716 counsellors.

717
718 I guess in drama, that's why when I work with a particular year
719 level, and there are issues like bullying, I might address it
720 through role-play, hotseating, things like that. And if I can teach
721 them through a subject area, then that's fantastic. And I guess
722 as far as my role goes, if we do see a need or if a student came
723 to see me, then I'd make sure I channelled them to the right
724 person in the school because we're not allowed to interfere or
725 take the role of community service or junior aid into our own
726 hands.

727
728 Su-Lin: Do you feel drama provides a platform, or encourages that
729 kind of atmosphere?

730
731 Donna: Definitely. I've had experiences where doing drama opens up
732 old wounds but also heals; I've told my students that drama
733 is presenting to an audience, be it only 2 people or in the class,
734 or a crowd of thousands; what has been, what can be and what
735 will be and if you can move the audience to a point where they
736 walk out of here either changing their minds about something,
737 thinking in their minds about something they might have never
738 done before, waking them up to an idea, or even having a
739 conversation with them, about an issue or something, I think
740 that's already a winner.

Appendix A: 3

Interview with Karen

Head of Department, Performing Arts, All Saints College

1 June 2001

1 Su-Lin: Why did you decide to become a teacher?

2

3 Karen: That's a long question! I came to drama education by default. I
4 was working with youth theatres that were not school based to
5 support myself as I trained for my bachelor of arts in Drama. So
6 I was always keyed into drama but in what capacity, I hadn't
7 decided. But I found working with young people in a youth
8 theatre context very fulfilling and I also felt that I was an able
9 teacher -I enjoyed students even at that time. I enjoyed
10 generating a love of the arts on many levels not only through
11 performance but actually building community through the arts. I
12 was working with one community, quite a socially
13 disadvantaged community, so the impact of the arts in that
14 community particularly on the young people, affirmed for me the
15 validity of the arts and arts education as a career.

16

17 So then I applied to do a graduate diploma in education with
18 QUT in my third year of the BA degree, and from that
19 experience I worked in another two high schools in
20 disadvantaged areas as an artist-in-residence, although I had an
21 also had a formal educational framework supporting me. In the
22 following year I did my graduate diploma practicum. At an
23 innovative college dealing with very complex social problems, so
24 I really had an opportunity to look power of the arts in
25 generating acceptance of difference and understanding of
26 community , culture and identity, again with young people. So
27 that's how I ended up teaching.

28

29 Su-Lin: So you did teaching studies at QUT? They did have that at that
30 time?

31

32 Karen: Yes, and that was the time the new Queensland drama syllabus
33 was being developed. So even though I was trained in the old
34 state syllabus, the new one was being developed in my graduate
35 year. So we were a cross-over year group. So I went out
36 teaching on the old one, which was called "theatre", at the first
37 school I taught at, then moved into the new "drama" syllabus. I
38 was very active at that time myself in that professional change-
39 over so I was really connected to that pedagogical change. That
40 was 1991, when I was doing my Graduate Diploma.

41 Su-Lin: So how do you view your role as a teacher?
42
43 Karen: I've got probably 3 levels to my educational philosophy. The
44 first would be a broad educational philosophy concerning the
45 role of education in the development of a person, and secondly
46 their understanding of self and culture. And the final dimension
47 would be the important role the arts play in actually creating a
48 powerful educational experience for young people. So I see
49 myself as someone who has the ability to develop strong
50 educational outcomes for young people to enable them to be
51 empowered to act critically, socially in the communities they are
52 working. So in a school like this where a lot of the kids come
53 from privileged backgrounds, socially very positive
54 backgrounds, where they are well loved and well looked after, I
55 see my role as to challenge the notion of privilege and for them
56 to understand at what cost to the whole community to maintain
57 certain cultural constructions and how they may play a part in
58 maintaining perhaps an oppressive construct. This can be very
59 challenging for students who have had such a lovely, privileged
60 life.
61
62 And for those students who come here from other cultures – it's
63 a very multicultural community – trying to negotiate cultural
64 identity, what does it mean to be Australian, and the role of the
65 arts in creating a dynamic and flexible identity for young people
66 and for culture.
67
68 How successful I am I don't know but I can and do try and
69 assess this from time to time. One level to measure this success
70 is the way I support students into the arts industry so there is
71 also a vocational dimension that can be evaluated, getting
72 students to participate in the arts once they've left school is
73 important as well as personal development which is much more
74 difficult to quantify.
75
76 Su-Lin: What do you think is drama's role in education?
77
78 Karen: As a drama teacher I would say everyone should be doing
79 drama; it is essential from grade 1 – 12! But in reality, I think
80 it's role in contemporary education is as one of the few subjects
81 that might be aligned to cultural studies. Students in the rest of
82 their educational program are still dealing with very content
83 based subjects and whilst drama also has a strong content
84 discipline, the drama classroom is a place to examine social
85 history, social constructs, community cultural development,
86 communication, ethics and values and technology in relation to,

87 for example government policies ... this is where it has a critical
88 role.
89
90 I would say that drama is the only subject for a lot of students
91 where they examine themselves in their wider context; how do
92 they belong in the wider community and how will they enter
93 their community context as citizens and how are they seen in the
94 community as young people. Drama is also looking at their own
95 development; how did they get to this point and what are the
96 kind of people they would like to be. So there is definitely that
97 element of personal development. Not in the context of work
98 done in Australia in the 60s which was more along the lines of
99 this is the way to be developed personally – these are the things
100 you need to be to be well-adjusted and developed, rather drama
101 as a subject now is looking at how young people can develop
102 their own sense of values and identity by actually challenging
103 some of their existing values through drama.
104
105 Again, with each student there might be different emphasis
106 according to their needs. If you have a very capable group who
107 are very comfortable with the dramatic form, then using their
108 strengths in practice might be a really important way of
109 challenging their notion of identity. But then you might have a
110 group that is really culturally aware but who struggle with the
111 form so developing their ability to utilize drama to express their
112 values may be the focus. So you need to work according to the
113 needs of each student and group.
114
115 Su-Lin: What would you say are some of the outcomes of being
116 educated in drama?
117
118 Karen: Having a cultural understanding; so being aware of what it
119 means to belong to your particular cultural group, having an
120 ability to be socially critical on every level; an ability to evaluate
121 community cultural constructs in policy, film, television, media,
122 multi-media, to developing critical reflection and assessment of
123 the stuff that you receive when you develop culture and identity,
124 or that are already in cultures as you are moving through them.
125 A sense of valuing yourself and a sense of values. Obviously in
126 this Christian context there is a value system that is quite explicit
127 but there is room in drama to explore alternatives and to validate
128 value systems, critique value systems so they become something
129 that are owned by the students. So critical social awareness,
130 cultural awareness, self-awareness.
131
132 And obviously there's a huge impact on literacy as well. In our

133 course particularly there's high level of literacy skills to teach
 134 and that are developed through the class activities, and we're
 135 supported by other subjects which are also highly focused on
 136 literacy and literacy development. There's a level of literacy
 137 that's required in this school to succeed.
 138
 139 And emotional intelligence. I think today's lessons require
 140 teachers to challenge students to be looking at what does it
 141 mean to be engaged with both your cognitive and emotional
 142 intelligence to create art. I think a lot of students are able to
 143 understand what is going on but to struggle engage the feeling
 144 elements, the aesthetic elements in their work as artists; in this
 145 year 11 group it's a trust issue. There's a huge trust block in the
 146 year 11 classroom that we are still working through. This limits
 147 their ability to engage cognitively and affectively with the work.
 148
 149 Su-Lin: What does an aesthetic education mean to you? How do you
 150 define it personally?
 151
 152 Karen: Bearing in mind all the discussion so far, the way I think of it as
 153 a practitioner in the classroom experience is it engages human
 154 beings on all the levels that they are engaged in normal life,
 155 everyday life but particularly heightening the affective domain.
 156 Linking the intellectual, cognitive to the affective or emotional
 157 intelligences, making the experiences kinesthetic but with the
 158 aim of creating very holistic understanding of human experience.
 159 So an aesthetic experience cannot be one that is just understood
 160 or just felt. So I'm trying to give my students confidence in the
 161 feeling levels in their lives as part of their intellectual and
 162 cognitive experience. They're already building on that from each
 163 other, but making my role is making that a conscious part of the
 164 educational process.
 165
 166 Su-Lin: Does this school have a counselor or psychologist?
 167
 168 Karen: Yes. We have four full-time counselors, which is very unusual
 169 for a school of this size. It's a large number. Teachers also have
 170 a pastoral care role, which means that those students who are in
 171 my own home class group, I teach them drama but also see them
 172 everyday in a pastoral care situation for a half a period; it's not a
 173 lot, and it's been reduced as the years have gone on and that's a
 174 shame but that's one of the reasons why I do know my students
 175 so well by this time of the year. As a pastoral care teacher I can
 176 have a more active involvement and awareness of other aspects
 177 of their life which could impact upon the drama in a small group.

178 Su-Lin: Is it difficult to teach, and then have to support them in a
179 counseling way as well?
180

181 Karen: I'm really conscious with the drama work because I don't
182 support all of them in that formal pastoral care role. Therefore in
183 the drama work we do, I structure the activities in such a way
184 that even if it's a deeply personal issue, I actively de-personalize
185 it through the de-briefing process and distancing the students
186 through role because I don't feel that students are obliged to
187 reveal anything deeply personal in a classroom context.
188 However in a drama class they might be moved by issues to
189 want to discuss these, and I have to be prepared to deal with
190 that effectively.
191

192 And I've had in the past, students being stimulated to quite want
193 to talk about personal issues. And I have the professional
194 responsibility to either indicate to them that I can't support them
195 in a way that they might want; so I might have to assist them in
196 finding the appropriate counselor and I've done that on a
197 number of occasions, and I would never take on it board as if I
198 were a counselor as that is something that is outside of my
199 jurisdiction as teacher. Because it is not appropriate and I'm not
200 trained in psychological counseling so if very personal issues
201 emerge in any classroom it is my role to support the student by
202 assisting them in receiving more professional support. And of
203 course student disclosure can happen to teachers in every
204 subject. Students have emotional events in their lives and
205 teachers play the role of a nurturer. So you can nurture but you
206 don't have to be a counselor. I'm very conscious of that
207 particularly because we're very provocative in our drama work.
208 And we have to take responsibility for that and so all the more
209 reason to be careful.
210

211 However, students have found it useful to talk about material
212 that they can't necessarily talk about in another context and they
213 don't need to talk about themselves but a personal journey
214 comes through the discovery about themselves within the drama
215 process.
216

217 Su-Lin: Could you describe for me your role in this school.
218

219 Karen: I'm the Head of Performing Arts which involves teaching 6
220 classes, which is quite a high teaching load for a HOD. I'm
221 responsible for 9 faculty, that involves curriculum music as well
222 as drama. My role as an administrator is to ensure that teachers
223 can facilitate effective curriculum and my main goal is to

224 develop effective curriculum, resource effective curriculum,
225 professionally develop teachers and also provide professional
226 support for those teachers through managing capital and
227 physical resources or whatever they need, and i also to deal with
228 interpersonal relationships, discipline issues in the department;
229 that is if teachers aren't able to manage them fully without
230 support or if there is a sticky issue that emerges, then my role is
231 to come up with strategies with that teacher or deal with the
232 student myself.

233
234 I see myself as a role model in terms of professional practice, so
235 I try to maintain a very high level of professional practice myself
236 so that that can be seen as a model. I trust the professionalism of
237 my own faculty, so I try not to be intrusive or directorial in my
238 role as HOD but I pro-actively develop constant communication
239 with and between my faculty through group meetings, one-on-
240 one meetings each week so that I can ensure that they are
241 feeling that they have that professional support. I would like to
242 be seen as a professional supportive colleague and not a
243 supervisor watching their classes or checking on them. I would
244 only deliberately observe colleagues who are first year teachers
245 and only if invited to participate in their lesson. I would develop
246 lessons with a teacher if they were stuck or trying new ideas. We
247 have a very collegial attitude towards planning, for example,
248 there are two of us taking senior drama and we write together
249 all our units of work and we would share all of our lessons; that
250 collegial approach is really important.

251
252 Then there's budgets and I'm also the representative for the arts
253 to the wider college community so that means I have to be an
254 advocate for the performing arts on every level, so politically,
255 personally, and professionally I always have to appear to be a
256 good and effective advocate. And I'm also the advocate and
257 representative for the school and my teachers in a wider
258 professional context. So I'm very involved professionally,
259 particularly in QADIE which means contributing to professional
260 swap-shops and inviting people to see our work, and viewing
261 other teacher's work and support other teachers.

262
263 I spend a lot of time working with beginning teachers. I think
264 pre-service education is one of my essential obligations and I
265 really enjoy the role of mentoring pre-service education students
266 and developing mentoring in drama was the focus for my
267 masters of education. I still spend a lot of time with my mentees.
268 Once teachers have left their pre-service situation here; I talk to
269 them on the phone and check work for them, and when their

270 school is setting up drama programs, I spend a fair bit of time
 271 putting together resource packages for them - collating and
 272 sending all the resources that we have that I can share with
 273 them. That can be a time consuming thing but I think is really
 274 important developing professional collegiality and for
 275 networking. It establishes a much stronger connection between
 276 all of the schools regardless of the system so that the subject
 277 itself is in a way sustained across the state. Drama and the arts
 278 are those areas that could always be threatened by
 279 rationalization so you need to have a strong professional
 280 network and a strong teaching culture.

281

282 Su-Lin: How would you split up your week in terms of time spent doing
 283 the various roles?

284

285 Karen: I think I'm paid to do a 30-hr week. My official week is five
 286 forty- minute periods allocated to my HOD position, two, forty-
 287 minute periods allocated to co-curricular and all the other
 288 periods are teaching periods and 20% of my teaching allocation
 289 is kept free for marking and preparation. Our week is 9 periods
 290 a day for 5 days. So that is the official breakdown. Then, I
 291 would spend on top of that, if there were a co-curricular
 292 production then I might spend up to 8 or 9 hours a week on that
 293 as well. I would probably have about 6 – 8 meetings of about 40
 294 minutes a week with different people in different contexts, and
 295 that might be a phone call too, it might not be face-to-face.

296

297 I spend during the day, sending out about 30 – 50 e-mails,
 298 probably about 20 on average depending on what's going on,
 299 and I receive about that and that includes students and parents,
 300 and I access my department teachers that way; students access
 301 teachers that way as well and because as a department we're
 302 geographically disparate -spread over the college, people
 303 teaching my subject are everywhere, e-mail's very central in
 304 maintaining a sense of belonging, department identity.

305

306 I would spend about a tenth of my day dealing with pastoral
 307 care issues, so looking after kids, having formal and informal
 308 meetings with kids. I am the mentor for 5 senior students. We
 309 have a mentor access program which means that the students
 310 can access me as a teacher for professional support, personal
 311 support, and that can get time consuming because one of them is
 312 the school captain, and the other 4 are performing arts students.
 313 So they're always coming and going and my job is to support
 314 them. I'm on the school activities team which organizes the
 315 school calendar which is a coup because we put so much into

316 the school calendar and now we have been given a voice in the
317 discussion regarding what goes on and off the calendar which is
318 really great, but that's another chunk of time. It's allocated a
319 period a week probably. When I've got a pre-service teacher it's
320 probably at least an hour a day. And all of this is on a weekly
321 basis.
322
323 I'm really conscious in doing my work at school so I don't take
324 it home unless it's the heavy marking period but I don't get any
325 time to do my personal planning and marking during official
326 school hours.
327
328 I'm here by quarter to eight at the latest and I would very rarely
329 leave before 5pm, 5.30 pm and quite often if all of these things
330 are happening at once, it might be two or three 9pm finishes and
331 that would be it for a couple of weeks so I definitely have those
332 days, and this does not include those days when we've got
333 rehearsals when I stay till 8 or 9 o'clock every afternoon. So
334 during heavy rehearsal periods I might spend every evening a
335 week here. And we do theatre excursions for the senior year, so
336 that's 6pm to 10pm. So that's another chunk of things we do.
337 And professionally I get involved on the weekends with in-
338 service and professional development activities and that's one of
339 the reasons why I resigned as vice president of my professional
340 association because for a while there I was studying still, was on
341 the management committee for the professional association,
342 running a musical and it was my first year as HOD here. It was
343 madness.
344
345 I'm on also on the district panel. I think is really important to be
346 on the community panel. That's not too bad, that's only a couple
347 of times a year.
348
349 Su-Lin: And you teach geography as well?
350
351 Karen: Yes. That's just one class, so 4 periods a week and that's
352 included in my teaching periods. All the others are drama
353 classes.
354
355 Su-Lin: How would you describe the students here generally in this
356 school?
357
358 Karen: There's over 55 cultural groups so they're a diverse cultural
359 community but they're all predominantly supportive of a
360 Christian ethos. So even if they come from a different cultural
361 background they often have a similar perspective on Christianity.

362 Some students are here because of the academic advantage
363 which in their mind may have nothing specifically to do with the
364 ethos of the college. So there are a large percentage of students
365 who are here because of their high academic standards. They
366 feel that by doing their senior education here that they will
367 achieve a high academic result. There are a percentage of
368 students who are here because they can afford to be here and
369 choose it because it's a co educational college. Most students'
370 parents support it because it's a co-educational situation and a
371 private situation. Parents and students really like that and the
372 great support for positive relationships between men and women
373 here, which is a big part of the school culture.

374
375 Many of the students here have traveled or lived overseas so
376 they have a perception of global contexts, and lived experiences
377 which are very diverse. Then there are students who have lived
378 on cattle stations their whole lives and never been to Brisbane,
379 and Papua New Guinea kids who come from the highlands and
380 have never been to the city. So you have these weird and
381 wonderful friendship connections but all diverse schools have
382 similar stories.

383
384 The school used to be selective in its enrolment and much
385 smaller which means that you were here because of academic
386 results, cultural or sporting excellence, and/or a Lutheran
387 connection. Now enrollment is more open so the college is much
388 larger and will almost take anyone who is willing to pay the fees
389 and abide by the college culture. So that has changed the
390 cultural dynamics of the college now that there's not so much a
391 tight control over who's enrolled we've got a much broader
392 representation of academic abilities and that trend is growing.
393 The rather privileged, elite group of academic students who
394 used to come here are still here but there's a much broader
395 variety of students and that's reflected in the subjects offered
396 and chosen. There are still the "academic" subjects but there's a
397 lot more vocational components to the college curriculum now
398 which is a philosophical change.

399
400 Su-Lin: Would you say they are mostly middle class and upper?

401
402 Karen: Yes. And the feeder area would be middle and upper class
403 students. Definitely. And if they're not, they're here on
404 scholarship. We offer a reasonably large percentage of
405 scholarships.

406 Su-Lin: There's obviously a lot of support for the arts here, an example
 407 being the no. of staff. What other forms of support could you
 408 list?
 409

410 Karen: Generous re-current budget; our capital budget is limited and
 411 our physical resources aren't that impressive considering the
 412 fees students pay; our rooms are very old and they're funny little
 413 buildings but the re-current budget is very good so I can employ
 414 artists-in-residence. I get \$5000 allocated to a senior
 415 performance which incorporates two artists over a period of
 416 time which is fantastic and provides the seniors with the
 417 opportunity to have a very real industry performance experience
 418 in year 12.
 419

420 Cultural events are given high priority on the calendar which
 421 means being incorporated into the school's daily life and being
 422 seen as part of the school's daily life. Some time-table support
 423 for my extra duties that I'm involved in professionally, because
 424 I've had to take a co-curricular component. It isn't formally
 425 recognized although I get some relief on my time-table. We get
 426 paid an honorarium for co-curricular involvement now, as of this
 427 year which is good; but it brings with it a whole lot of ethical
 428 issues regarding our roles. Also if you constantly take on the
 429 extra things you can be taking time away from your family or
 430 other people in your life. Having some kind of remuneration can
 431 be a positive but can also make you feel obliged to do more.
 432

433 There's a general culture of acknowledging the academic
 434 component for the arts subjects so we're not battling the idea
 435 that doing drama is doing an easy subject and we've had to be
 436 really active to maintain that perception as the school population
 437 changes. Unfortunately, as the school population changes the
 438 broader culture changes in terms of the academic nature of all
 439 the subjects and this does not just affect the arts.
 440

441 We are having to cater to a broader range of abilities and most
 442 programs still don't, to be perfectly honest. We are still top-
 443 heavy but that is changing so the courses will have to
 444 accommodate a broader range of students but our concern is
 445 losing that top range of students who will perceive the change
 446 and maybe they'll start following each other and go into physics
 447 or chemistry instead of taking a risk and taking an arts subject
 448 because they already have that traditional perception of the arts
 449 as a non-academic choice. So we're very lucky to regularly have
 450 one or two of the top exiting students doing drama which is not
 451 common in drama but we have that academic tradition and we

452 want to maintain it. And we're also concerned about doing
453 justice for students who are taking our subject for different
454 reasons and with different abilities so it's up to us to come to
455 terms with dealing with a wider spectrum.

456
457 Su-Lin: What about in terms of physical resources?

458
459 Karen: We have 2 drama rooms and we also have a storeroom. We
460 have also a large teaching room directly above administration.
461 It's the school's original assembly hall from the 40s. It has a
462 fixed stage and it's actually not a bad performance area with a
463 high ceiling and it's a nice space but the noise became
464 unmanageable. That's now used only after-hours and for a
465 couple of classes a week. We've also just converted a double
466 classroom and that's being turned into a studio space so it has
467 lighting bars, black curtains ... we're still getting all the bits and
468 pieces. So we'll actually have a more functional studio space so
469 the students can do workshops in a more conventional
470 classroom but do their assessment in a more evocative space, a
471 and more professional space too because of the lighting etc.
472 That we have, we have quite good technological equipment
473 which we don't really use during class time because it's not a
474 specific focus in the senior curriculum but we do have big co-
475 curricular projects so that's where the interested students are
476 taught those skills and they like to do the cross-over into their
477 classroom work themselves.

478
479 The rest of the arts are situated all over college. The string
480 instruments are kept in another cottage, in another building are
481 two music rooms for lessons and where the bands are – stage
482 band, concert band. I think there are an extraordinary number of
483 ensembles here. There's a huge number of students doing music.
484 There's also a classroom for drama where the year 8's do their
485 drama. Then at the opposite end of the school there's a music
486 classroom. In the middle school there's a chorale rehearsal room
487 which is a large room that also doubles up for a music classroom
488 as well, though it's not really designed to be a music classroom.
489 The chorale is a mass choir of one hundred and twenty kids who
490 travel overseas a lot and are a big deal, highly regarded. And
491 then there is a music staff room which is for combined curricular
492 and co-curricular music teachers.

493
494 The college is trying to build a performing arts building but ...
495 it's been mooted and they were supposed to start building in
496 1995 but they haven't started yet. So we're still waiting. At this
497 stage, the school has made a commitment to it; they've probably

498 made the most explicit commitment to it since '95 for 2003
 499 when construction begins. So we'll wait and see. And the plan is
 500 to bring all of us together into a shared space, drama, music and
 501 the co-curricular aspects of drama and music, probably dance as
 502 well.
 503

504 Su-Lin: Does this mean that the staff are located all over as well?
 505

506 Karen: Yes. So the staff are everywhere. I have six drama staff 3 of us
 507 in my staff room, the 2 teachers in the middle school are based
 508 there and then there's one who is also a dance teacher and she is
 509 in the P.E. staff room, then the classroom music teachers are
 510 down in the music staff room, and part of my responsibility is to
 511 liaise with curriculum down in the junior school which is a
 512 whole separate campus sort of down there. Which is why e-mail
 513 has been such an amazing thing for me, it's important in keeping
 514 cohesion in the department. And I can't ever meet them all in
 515 one day because of the complex schedules, so I might run three
 516 meetings in a week where people come and I stay in my office
 517 over lunchtime or a specific period for three days.
 518

519 I write a memo from my office, a kind of newsletter for the
 520 department which I circulate which has 'action' and 'items' and
 521 then I just deal with individual people through their 'action'.
 522 And I use the whole school newsletter to communicate to
 523 faculty or community and I'm really active in that. It used to be
 524 just for sport, and tuckshop etc. But it has become, much to the
 525 chagrin of the typist, a big vehicle for performing arts. I write a
 526 regular column and that idea was then picked up by other
 527 departments who also began to include regular columns ex. film
 528 and TV and so now it has gone back to mainly just sports and
 529 tuckshop because it was too large and becoming too much work
 530 for the admin. But I still contribute regularly.
 531

532 And we have an intranet system that the kids are using more
 533 often than we are using it ourselves, and through that I think
 534 we'll build up other avenues as teachers technical confidence
 535 grows. For example we use digital cameras to record classwork
 536 and production experiences and place them on the intranet. It's
 537 still ad-hoc and not enough to be called central to our program
 538 but the college is allowing us to develop those areas which is
 539 really good. So the lap-tap is another essential resource that has
 540 been made available to all teachers.
 541

542 Su-Lin: Is music the largest area in the arts in this school?
 543

544 Karen: In terms of co-curriculum, yes. Music and sport are the biggest
545 areas. In terms of curriculum, drama is a much larger elective
546 than the music curriculum. Music curriculum is still a very small
547 subject past year 10. But that's growing as we're trying really
548 hard to incorporate music technology into the curriculum which
549 is a big attraction to students; being able to record, and
550 compose, and work in a technological framework has attracted
551 more and more students. We still have nice healthy class sizes in
552 music compared to other schools but overall it's still a small
553 elective. It's quite interesting that so many students are involved
554 in music but so few study it.

555

556 Dance is only for year 8 so when we get the building, we're
557 hoping to get it as a subject area here. And those plans will
558 eventuate but not till we get this new facility.

559

560 Art and media are under art, or visual art and design. So there's
561 Art and then there's Performing Arts which incorporates Music,
562 Dance, Drama.

563

564 Su-Lin: Is the enrolment for visual arts and performing arts comparable?

565

566 Karen: Drama is larger than film and television, film and television is
567 larger than music, visual art is larger than drama. So Art is the
568 biggest elective and they have their own block too which means
569 they can manage a larger enrollment. But our drama and visual
570 art classes would be comparable in terms of senior numbers, in
571 11 and 12. We actually work very closely together and develop
572 shared curriculum and we're very close to the Art department.
573 So drama and visual art would be the top 2 arts electives, maybe
574 visual art a little bit larger. I don't know actually. We'd be close.

575

576 Su-Lin: What's the population for drama? Do you know off-hand?

577

578 Karen: I can give rough figures. This year there is 55 in year 12, 70 in
579 year 11, there is a total of 620 students in the senior school. All
580 year 8s do drama and music, that's 270, four drama classes in
581 year 9 which is about 120, and another 4 classes in year 10
582 which is 120. So about 350 kids in the senior school and as well
583 as the year 8s from the middle school.

584

585 They elect for drama in year 9. In terms of percentage, we're
586 got 600 students in years 11 and 12, and 120 are doing drama.
587 That's not bad. And then the totals, there's about 270 in year 8,
588 about 250 in year 9, about 250 in year 10, 300 year 11, 300 year
589 12. So about half do drama.

590 Su-Lin: What about staff numbers for performing arts?
591
592 Karen: Gosh, there'll be a lot of us involved in the arts. Probably 25 –
593 30 including supporting staff or teacher aides. If you look at co-
594 curriculum music, yes, it'll be closer to 50 faculty because
595 you've got 28 teachers who come just for instrumental teaching,
596 and 3 full-time band and group leaders. We have a head of
597 strings, and head of band, and head of chorale - he doubles as
598 head of co-curricular music it is a big school and almost
599 everyone's involved in the arts so ... in some capacity.
600
601 Su-Lin: Could you venture why?
602
603 Karen: The college actually has a strong tradition of valuing the arts. In
604 Australia, music particularly has been seen as part of a well-
605 rounded private school education. So if you go to a private
606 school you are expected to play footy and you sing in a choir
607 and you ... at most schools you either play footy or sing in a
608 choir but here, in this school, there's been a lot of students who
609 play footy and sing in the choir or play the cello and are the
610 captain of the volleyball team. So that's why the kids are
611 committed to both sport and music or performing arts.
612
613 In our last dramatic production, the head of the first 15 football
614 team was a featured performer, that sorts of thing, and it's the
615 same at Villanova College (an all boys catholic college) where
616 the boys are encouraged to participate in a broader range of
617 activities and not just sport. That means that there are more
618 young people who are willing to be involved. So you've got that
619 middle-upper class vision of a: "it's the right thing to do an arts
620 subject", and the support amongst students and parents is also
621 due to the work of the performing arts head before me, for
622 about 10 years, there's been intensive drama programs, and
623 really committed people who've wanted to work at a really high
624 level and, after 10 years, I do think you develop a culture and
625 we bring in new teachers who've got the same attitude about it.
626
627 Su-Lin: Would you say you involve the community a lot in your
628 programs?
629
630 Karen: Definitely parents. The wider community are not necessarily as
631 actively engaged. We've got about 5 or 6 mothers who are fully
632 engaged. They work with us in a completely volunteer capacity
633 and they give so much time, so there's the really intensive
634 support but generally the support comes more from the
635 community attendance; they'll come for the students' events.

636 Parents are very conscious of the curriculum here, they're still
637 very aware of the fundamentally academic outcomes which are
638 very important, so they're really onto you if they're not
639 comfortable with how the students are progressing so you do
640 have that rigorous involvement. I've always had that kind of
641 support which I think is positive. Parents here allow students to
642 take it in their junior years and then into their senior years, that's
643 a cultural advantage .. that's hard for some parents to accept
644 that their children want to do drama to senior exit particularly.
645 They can accept music more readily than they can accept drama.
646 But they still allow it because there's the reputation of the
647 college which have had academic students do well in drama and
648 so they keep allowing it to happen.
649

650 Some of our best academic students in year 10, if we get a sense
651 that they're not going to come onboard, we would be pro-active
652 and ring their parents and try and persuade them to see that their
653 children are multi-talented and they could manage physics and
654 drama. But that does not always happen, for example the
655 international students have different educational agendas and
656 they (and their parents) are not always as supportive of the
657 students taking arts subjects into their senior years, although
658 they might be for co-curricular events. They might be willing to
659 come along and see the other events.
660

661 Su-Lin: Is classroom work showcased to parents?

662
663 Karen: Yes, it is but perhaps not as much as it might be in a smaller
664 school context. The sheer size, and then the lack of facility
665 means that we do have a year 11 showcase and a year 12
666 showcase at the end of the year which is really popular and it's
667 over 2 nights. The year 12s generally do a major public
668 performance. That's another component as well. I tend to be of
669 the mind-set that I don't want parents to see their kids perform
670 till they're ready to share. I like the year 9s to perform for junior
671 school or I work with the junior school and the year 9's in a
672 process drama together.
673

674 I might get 10s to perform on 1 night a year but only really
675 polished work or I might get them to perform as part of
676 presentation right (for about 1500 family and friends of the
677 college) at the end of the year. In terms of classroom work, I
678 would love to do more co-class sharing and we're starting more
679 and more to incorporate drama activities during the lunch-hours.
680 This is a really busy place, and this additional expectation of
681 performance is just 'another thing' on already loaded plates, and

682 there's just so much going on, you just have to rationalize.
683 We're very lucky to have the supportive culture.
684
685 The stuff going on in the classrooms is spread by word of
686 mouth, the excellent things that are going on. I would prefer to
687 maintain this than show average classroom practice for the sake
688 of more sharing in the community. Curriculum rigor has always
689 been my main objective and as long as it's good, the kids are
690 enjoying it, and it's being well supported then we are
691 successful... I think that's a wonderful spin-off in a place like
692 this, in a school environment which appreciates excellence in
693 arts beyond the performance outcome.
694
695 We also have a student theatre company; a fully run student
696 company who produce at least 1 play a year. I liaise with them
697 and supervise them but they do it. And that's been running for 3
698 years now. It used to come and go in the past, depending on the
699 students running it but it's building a reputation now. It only
700 involves about 15 – 20 kids. It's fully student run so that's a lot
701 of commitment, without teacher direction. So the top kids often
702 take it on board.
703
704 Su-Lin: So the end-of-year performances for the parents are done here in
705 school?
706
707 Karen: Yes, in that little hall which sits about 110. But for the year 12
708 performance which takes place in the third term, happens in
709 another venue. I take them off campus so we usually use the
710 Metro Arts Theatre in the city because it's an intimate space
711 with a great atmosphere. The parents kind of enjoy it and it
712 gives the students a feeling of ownership.
713
714 Su-Lin: And there's 1 major co-curricular production a year?
715
716 Karen: Yes, 1 mega-production a year. We produced a production at
717 the Visy theatre, Brisbane Powerhouse this year with much
718 success. I'm also involved in Stage-X in a performance season
719 called XLD (excellence in drama and dance from schools). The
720 festival is also at the powerhouse at the end of the year. Some
721 students from here were performing but I've canceled that
722 because that's when I'm due to have the baby. However I'm
723 still one of the facilitators of the festival and running a youth
724 forum as part of the week but normally I would find projects like
725 that for student performance throughout the year.
726
727 We just made a film with the human rights commission on

728 immigration. The students and I wrote and directed it and then
729 the film crew came and filmed it on campus. We've done that 3
730 times, since '95 and that again, was about 20 students involved
731 in that. And the students have been good in sharing
732 opportunities like that around so that's another example of
733 drama's connection with the wider community activities.
734

735 I would professionally just get bored silly if all the performance
736 work the students were involved with was institutionalized or
737 school based, I like to be involved in the wider theatre industry,
738 and to keep meeting people who might employ our students. It
739 is important for me professionally to compare our student's
740 standards of work to the professional industry standard. I mean
741 it's really tough, but we expect our best student's work to be
742 comparable, they are moving into a tertiary level, many are at a
743 tertiary level already, they are already ready for that transition
744 and are at a very high professional level as performers,
745 technicians etc.. but we can expect that because they're the kind
746 of kids we already have here at the college.
747

748 I don't work like that in another teaching context, I might have
749 a totally different agenda with different students but while I'm
750 here, I feel obliged to create experiences that will push them to
751 that level.
752

753 Su-Lin: Wow! You're incredibly busy.

754
755 Karen: Yes. It is a lot. It doesn't feel like a lot when we're doing it but
756 yes, it is a lot. But there is a similar culture and work practice
757 elsewhere, I mean a few of us came out of QADIE at the same
758 time and we all like to work and have that kind of professional
759 commitment to us. And it's come from amazing role models like
760 Judith and Christine and from people who take what we do
761 incredibly seriously. So you've got the feeling that you have take
762 the opportunity to move forward and will be encouraged to
763 take yourself and your work that seriously.
764

765 And we all love the arts; we all have arts-based lives and we all
766 want to keep making that our lives and not just a job. It's a
767 passion, and depending on the school, and whichever school
768 I've been, it's always about getting the best according to
769 students needs, that's how I work. And if I'm lucky enough to
770 be in a school that has the money and the students to work in a
771 highly professional way ... and I am lucky here. There are the
772 struggles but there's lots to counter-balance that so you don't
773 get so overwhelmed by the struggles and you spend a lot more

774 time being rewarded for your advocacy which motivates me to
775 keep on going.
776

777 Su-Lin: Do you have to handle all the administration work yourself?
778

779 Karen: Yes. I don't have to create the school time-table but I have to
780 liaise with the person who does it. I don't have to do
781 absenteeism, we have a officer who does that. We have 2
782 punitive disciplinarians which i don't use very often unless it's
783 for theft, and they are useful for teachers at time for example if
784 you catch a student smoking, and you don't have time to follow
785 it up, you can hand that over to someone else. I have to do
786 parent-teacher issues like every other teacher. I do the
787 newsletter and other school publications and I might be the
788 facilitator of other people writing things so I might have to
789 chase the copy but I might not have to generate all the copy
790 necessarily. And if I've been asked to write for publications, I
791 might get someone else to write because it's their project.
792

793 I've been asked to contribute in the Curriculum Council so I
794 have a responsibility in representing the performing arts in this
795 school. The Curriculum Council is a discussion group who focus
796 on the school philosophy. It is attended by all the HODs.
797

798 As well as this there is just general administration, photocopying
799 ... I get 10 hours a week of teacher aid time which is good but
800 that's not comparable to math or science, they've got more but
801 compared to other schools, it's great. So that's the reality. And
802 that person does all my purchasing. So I'll order but that person
803 takes it over from there which is really good so I'm not running
804 around. So I sign order books everyday and I'm writing up
805 order forms but I don't have to chase that. The purchase of
806 theatre scripts are also taken care of by that person so I book
807 them but they're all the details of cataloging etc. are managed by
808 the teacher aid.
809

810 Su-Lin: Are the students in the co-curricular production all drama
811 students?
812

813 Karen: Majority, but not all. And they're not all the best. There are
814 some students who can't make the schedule even though they
815 make the cast through the audition. We quite consciously take
816 on board students who we think will benefit from positive peer
817 support so it's not the same group over and over again. There
818 are certain students who over the years have been through the
819 productions but there are quite different groups of students each

820 year usually.

821

822 It's not a drama class club. We hold auditions. About 250

823 students showed an interest in our production this year but when

824 we told them what it was about, and what it was, only about 40

825 or 50 turned up for the auditions. And then that dropped down

826 to about 20. And a lot of the students who didn't get in as

827 performers became involved in other capacities.

828

829 Su-Lin: I wanted to ask you about teacher training. Are there a fixed

830 number of hours each year that a teacher needs to fulfill?

831

832 Karen: I think the college is required to offer us, or construct for us 4

833 days, and I think there's a percentage of those 4 days which

834 needs to be in professional development but a lot of people do a

835 2-day course, like the QADIE conference in their own time.

836 Which means that you can do other things on those 4 days. I

837 think there's a percentage, like 1% maybe of your wage that

838 needs to be spent on professional training for the whole faculty.

839 It's a fairly high number from the payroll that has been allocated

840 to professional training for faculty and staff. Things that this is

841 spent onlike we all have a first aid certificate, we all have to

842 go through work health and safety, and we all might go to a

843 curriculum thing like a ... we've all got to do technology course

844 in Powerpoint or Word because we've all got to become

845 computer literate. So there are a few that are compulsory, then

846 there's a fair amount of support for you to attend in your own

847 time but not during school time, they're quite restrictive about

848 that which is the case in all schools, I think.

849

850 Su-Lin: As a HOD, do you encourage your teachers to go for training?

851 Do you get the material for them ...

852

853 Karen: Yes. I get it for them or I might find out what's happening for

854 the year and I might go: "ok, this is on, this is really good, do

855 you want to go?" If it's general, I might put the form on

856 someone's table, and say do you want to come with me to this?

857 If it's something related to our curriculum, I might encourage

858 them to go and I might go with them, or set it up for them but

859 mostly .. I mean I'm really lucky to have a good relationship

860 with my faculty, they're very honest about what they want to

861 attend and it's a very busy school so sometimes they don't want

862 to go.

863

864 I don't see the need to have constant professional development

865 activities that are so formalized that they drive everyone nuts

866 anyway. I'm very in the mode that I work with professionals
867 who most of the time behave professionally, sometimes they
868 don't but we all do our best to behave in an independent,
869 collegial way, and if we don't, then the problems emerge, and
870 we deal with the problems and resolve the issues but I'm not
871 going to say: "you all should do this".

872
873 Su-Lin: Do you run any training for teachers?

874
875 Karen: Personally, I run in-service for primary teachers in drama
876 because they're really keen in having it at this college, and I
877 would have presented at QADIE every year now for about 8
878 years or every second year for those 8 years and I've presented
879 nationally 3 times. I go for every national conference myself and
880 when I was vice-president of QADIE and National Liaison
881 Officer for Queensland that was in a formal capacity and I would
882 go personally and the school supports me by paying my
883 registration and \$80 a day.

884
885 I run in-servicing for the new syllabus, the new arts syllabus for
886 my faculty but that's really more a dissemination of information
887 and I do that a lot. So if something comes up, I take time
888 communicating that to other people. Not quite in-service but
889 professional information sharing and not everyone responds but
890 for those who do, it's out there. And I create resource files
891 when my pre-service teachers are here or for anyone who's here,
892 this includes developing resources files with a lot of professional
893 reading and an extensive professional library. That's another
894 great thing. We have a lot of support for our teacher reference
895 library development which becomes a permanent resource.

896
897 The main philosophy I have is, I guess you have to be an active
898 advocate to maintain integrity, and maintain the support and in
899 the arts, to pretend that it's just going to be there forever is not
900 real in any arts context. You must be willing to work. It's like
901 doing corporate sponsorship for a company. It doesn't come
902 every year. You have to work the same people every year, or
903 different people every year or a different company, and there's
904 never going to be a completely secure time in the arts or art
905 education... you just have to become more capable of playing
906 games, politically and professionally and it's the same in
907 education and especially in the context of building it up, you
908 really need people who are willing to commit like that, unless
909 it's imposed by the state. There's an element which is really
910 good in that but it really won't get up culturally unless it comes
911 from within as well, and is allowed to evolve I think, from the

912 people who are there.
 913
 914 The culture here is something that has evolved in the arts, and I
 915 think the constant evolution is what keeps us going but that's
 916 how we do it here, but this culture wouldn't necessarily be
 917 sustained elsewhere. So we're lucky to have had that evolution.
 918 But it feels like it's still evolving. I think we're a lot more aware
 919 of what's been left undone, what needs to be done, like the
 920 junior curriculum, and how we're adapting that and the time-
 921 table
 922
 923 Su-Lin: Just to clarify, you're in charge of all the year levels?
 924
 925 Karen: Yes, from 1 – 12. Junior school from 1 – 5, middle school is
 926 from 6 – 8, then there's the junior program which is 9 and 10,
 927 and senior program is 11 and 12. But there's no formal
 928 curriculum for the junior school so I do the in-service in the
 929 primary school, so I know the teachers who are using drama. I,
 930 this year supervised a primary pre-service teacher so I actually
 931 liaised directly with the teacher and with her. She was from
 932 Michigan, so that was great, she's another overseas placement.
 933 We wrote stuff together and she taught that. I didn't get to be as
 934 connected with her as I might have had I been physically closer
 935 to the junior school but it was fine, she had a good experience.
 936 And I run 2 projects taking the year 9 and 10s into the junior
 937 school.
 938
 939 I work closely with the junior school principal and he really
 940 responds. He loves the drama stuff and really responds to the
 941 work we do. And with the middle school guy, the middle school
 942 principal, I work closely with him in developing time-table and
 943 curriculum. I'm fully responsible for developing class groups
 944 and the allocation of rooms because we have a cycle system in
 945 the performing arts where the students do a different unit each
 946 term in music, drama, dance.
 947
 948 Su-Lin: So from year 1 – 7, drama is used more as a teaching
 949 methodology?
 950
 951 Karen: Yeah, but it would be more from 1 – 5 more as a teaching
 952 methodology, 7 it's a subject for 1 period a week, year 8 it's 2
 953 periods a week, year 6 it's sort of, I've encouraged it to be built
 954 in into the English language arts program, but it's not formally
 955 separate as a subject - a separate discipline but yes, I'd say it's
 956 more of a teaching tool in the primary then it is in the middle.

957 In the middle it becomes a separate discipline but not separate
 958 enough, but that's just my opinion! So I would like it to be
 959 much more ... I mean I would be happy to integrate it in
 960 curriculum structure, and unitize it or link it to SOSE (Studies
 961 of Society and the Environment) or language or Christian
 962 knowledge or whatever, but I'd like it to be seen as to be
 963 something on its own too. But that requires someone like
 964 Sandra Gattenhof in the school. It requires that kind of level, a
 965 specialist, someone who as an educator can link the curriculum
 966 ... so as a HOD I have my vision and if I had the means, or
 967 someone like me who was available time wise, then I'm sure I
 968 could get it up and going more efficiently in the middle and
 969 junior school but there isn't anyone with that time so generalist
 970 teachers have taken on the major organization of the curriculum
 971 subject, it's not fair to ask them to do more, it's not real
 972 considering their huge workloads and school expectations.
 973
 974 Su-Lin: You mentioned earlier that you bring in artists, like artists-in-
 975 residence?
 976
 977 Karen: Yes. We've had physical theatre specialists for example, I've
 978 worked with Anna Yen on a number of occasions and I directed
 979 a show with Anna outside of school with the Hereford Sisters
 980 with Backbone Youth Arts, 2 – 3 years ago now. We've had 2
 981 dramaturgs, two playwrights, a forum theatre specialist who
 982 worked with our 12s for 3 weeks last year which is quite a long
 983 secondment. This is in the last 2 years. And residence time varies
 984 from a single day or several days or every lesson for 3 weeks.
 985
 986 Su-Lin: When they come in do they usually take over the lesson?
 987
 988 Karen: Yes, but we work in tandem. So I probably plan with Anna,
 989 what are you going to do? And I follow that up the next time I
 990 see her and I generally use artists that I'm familiar with as well;
 991 people I either have worked with or I know their work so that I
 992 can actually sustain a professional connection. I always see them
 993 as an enhancement of the curriculum process so I don't bring
 994 people in who I think are just different versions of me, rather
 995 they should contribute a level of expertise that the students can
 996 immediately appreciate.
 997
 998 Although a lot of the time I think artists that work with young
 999 people tend to do the same thing as teachers do but for the
 1000 students it often has that lovely integrity you lose in classroom
 1001 practice when it's coming from an "artist". I invited an artist
 1002 from backbone to come and speak to the kids to get them

1003 involved in backbone a bit, acting academy, a lot of kids are
 1004 involved in that but they don't come up as much. So if we're
 1005 doing something, and we happen to know someone, then we try
 1006 and get that real connection with outside organizations and
 1007 artists, and a lot of times the students don't realize that they're
 1008 working with highly regarded artists because they get used to it.
 1009 They don't realize that they're really lucky to have a school that
 1010 supports that industry and education link.
 1011
 1012 And this is very active in the visual arts department as well and I
 1013 think that's why they're the predominant arts elective ...
 1014 because there's a culture of bringing artists in and students
 1015 benefit so much from making links and stuff and it's so
 1016 wonderful that the kids are working like that.
 1017
 1018 Even for our lighting or technology training and supervision, we
 1019 often use people who are specialists, like film and TV
 1020 supervisors, or artists, or professionals and the kids end up
 1021 working with them.
 1022
 1023 You know the guys who have done our lighting support for
 1024 production have ended up employing our students. We end up
 1025 with a nice networking process and we're all (the artists and
 1026 teachers) about the same demographic, age-wise. And again, it's
 1027 exciting, and it's sort of keeping the networks alive between
 1028 education and industry. It is that important industry education
 1029 link. The artists who work with me, appreciate my job a lot
 1030 more and therefore appreciate the potential of young people and
 1031 drama in education. And we have artists who are trained in
 1032 education as well so in Queensland we have this lovely cross-
 1033 over.
 1034
 1035 Su-Lin: Yes, which is important. In Singapore we don't have many
 1036 artists trained in pedagogy ...
 1037
 1038 Karen: Yeah, you're developing it as you go which can still be very
 1039 valid I think but there's nothing like having a pedagogy that
 1040 keeps you grounded, scaffolded ...
 1041
 1042 Su-Lin: Yes, it keeps you grounded.
 1043
 1044 Karen: And you know why you're making the decisions you are.
 1045 Definitely. Which is why when I was teaching in youth theatre
 1046 it's the same thing, I really wanted to learn how to do it
 1047 properly. And feel good about it all the time. And when you
 1048 have twenty bad experiences, you say: "oh, there must be a way

1049 to avoid that!" I should have had some kind of foresight or there
1050 must be something I can do.
1051
1052 It's like working with young people so ... that's the passion that
1053 drives you, you have to like them and you have to enjoy
1054 artmaking and pedagogy.
1055
1056 Su-Lin: Do any of the other teachers here who are not drama teachers
1057 use drama in their classroom?
1058
1059 Karen: Yes. There's a history teacher who uses teacher and student in
1060 role, and a couple of language teachers in the middle school who
1061 might don a costume from time to time, get to be hot-seated by
1062 the kids or ... but you're not going to walk into every classroom
1063 here and see drama in action ... they are the exception.
1064
1065 Su-Lin: It seems that this school has the power to attract, choose and
1066 employ really good teachers here.
1067
1068 Karen: Yes. The reputation of the department attracts the applicants but
1069 that depends on who makes the employment decision in the end.
1070 I have a say in who I employ but not always. So that can be
1071 dependent on the person's other subject area so we look at the
1072 broader context and that can be more influential than their
1073 drama specific training. We've seen in the past less successful
1074 placements but the core has mostly been good.
1075
1076 Su-Lin: I meant to ask you about teacher assessment. Is there a certain
1077 way that it's done here?
1078
1079 Karen: Yes, the college has an appraisal process which we have to do
1080 every 3 years. You write down a reflection from your last
1081 appraisal process and what you have planned to have
1082 accomplished, your major professional, personal goals and then
1083 you re-write that with the future goals in mind. Then there's a
1084 panel with at least one of your superiors, and two of your peers
1085 and they discuss it with you, and discuss areas you would like to
1086 develop and talk about strategies on how you might achieve
1087 those goals, and then that's signed off and you do it again every
1088 three years.
1089
1090 Su-Lin: Do you within the drama department watch other teachers
1091 teach?
1092
1093 Karen: Sometimes. I don't have to be so formal in my monitoring of the
1094 classes as there isn't that many of us teaching. So because I

1095 collaboratively plan and moderate assessment, and I sort of
1096 invite teachers to come and watch my assessment, I get invited
1097 to watch their assessment or we assess together. And the
1098 classrooms just being where they are, I keep an eye on what's
1099 going on and parents call me if there's a problem straightaway
1100 here and that only happens very rarely and teachers have usually
1101 alerted me to the issue before.

1102
1103 I have had a teacher here with me for his first 3 years of
1104 teaching, and as a first year he invited me to see his work. With
1105 first years sometimes I do and sometimes I don't formally
1106 observe but I planned with him really closely in that year and
1107 was very involved in his reflection process as he went through
1108 certain experiences in that first year. I spent a lot of time on
1109 reflection and just making time to talk about happenings in the
1110 classroom and from that, the relationship develops. And from
1111 that kind of communication process know what happens because
1112 I get told. I tend to work that way so that people feel that they
1113 can come to me, that I won't judge them and that I'll be very
1114 open to their concerns. I still drop in on his classes and he has
1115 always felt that he can just drop in on mine-it is very collegial
1116 and informal.

1117
1118 I trust that there's more than 1 way of teaching so their style
1119 might be different to mine but I try and give them positive
1120 support for whatever particular approach they have. But there
1121 are certain ... there are certain problems that haven't come up
1122 for any of my faculty yet but if they did, I would ask and
1123 observe, I would become very active and I've been very lucky
1124 not to have to.

1125
1126 Su-Lin: And for your own practice, how do you reflect on that?

1127
1128 Karen: Being involved in the wider professional community, I can
1129 compare my own artistic work with other professional work.
1130 Being connected closely to other teachers professionally, seeing
1131 their students' work, discussing approaches to work with them,
1132 connecting with other work programs. Being on the panel,
1133 looking at work from other schools and thinking, will my work
1134 fit into that standard? Working as a pre-service educator and
1135 supervising pre-service teachers, I think that's a really good way
1136 of developing professional dialogue and I really encourage my
1137 pre-service teachers to reflect and feedback on my professional
1138 practice, and say what they like/dislike, and I'm very critical of
1139 my own practice so I'm a critical practitioner.

1140 Like this year 11 class, I spend a lot of time thinking about
 1141 what's going on, and what can I change, and how can I effect
 1142 change and so I tend to open that dialogue up with my pre-
 1143 service teachers. So they help me. And then of course I
 1141 encourage and get students to feedback to me on my classes in
 1145 the unit at the end of term, get them to write; do written
 1146 feedback. Again, it's not something I do every term with every
 1147 class but particularly with classes like this year 11 class. They're
 1148 probably going to do a fair bit of reflection because I really want
 1149 to find out what's going on.
 1150

1151 And the kids here are very open about things. They're very nice
 1152 and tell you things about your own practice in a nice way. And
 1153 they know that I will listen to what they have to say. So that's
 1154 another way I test my own practice by students' response and
 1155 feedback.
 1156

1157 Su-Lin: In terms of planning, do the 3 of you plan together for the year's
 1158 work?
 1159

1160 Karen: Yes. It happens on several levels. I probably do a fair bit of the
 1161 early performance project planning in the year before, so
 1162 clarifying and submitting what we want to do as performance
 1163 projects next year, preparing budgets and getting them into
 1164 calendar. This is usually in October.
 1165

1166 In terms of curriculum planning, we just had a day as a group re-
 1167 writing our work program. In terms of every grade planning, I
 1168 tend to sit down the relevant teachers and say, what are your
 1169 plans, how will this fit into a calendar. The school also has a
 1170 whole lot of documents that you have to fill in to assist in this
 1171 planning, like when are the test dates will be and so-on.... Then
 1172 we talk about what we're going to do as assessment for each
 1173 unit in each year level. This is when we will re-write units.
 1174

1175 I had 2 full days with my faculty at the beginning of the year
 1176 where we talked about classroom culture stuff like maintaining
 1177 resources, cleaning up rubbish in classroom areas, and I tend to
 1178 be rather fascist in this area but because in the other areas I'm
 1179 fairly low-key, they're ok with that. Housekeeping. And I think,
 1180 although you'd have to ask them really, that everyone feels they
 1181 belong to a department where their work is valued, so they value
 1182 their work. I get that feeling anyway, and they all have their own
 1183 lives, and communities, and I'm not expecting that this
 1184 department should be their total life. And I'm happy to give and
 1185 take as much as people are willing to give most of the time

1186 because that's life.

1187

1188 Su-Lin: You mentioned that you get feedback from the students on the
1189 units. Does that go back into the planning?

1190

1191 Karen: Yes, definitely. The written feedback would go back to my
1192 personal planning specifically.

1193

1194 When students are choosing a subject for the following year, like
1195 in year 9 and they're choosing drama in year 10, I actually asked
1196 the teachers to do formal evaluations with them in a group. We
1197 did this again this year as well. What they wrote, what they said
1198 became very relevant to our planning and classroom dialogue
1199 because we perceived a big problem with kids not picking drama
1200 in the first year 11 subject survey last year. We had had all these
1201 teachers leaving and I was wondering if that was the reason, or
1202 if there were other reasons. And then after the survey some of
1203 the kids did pick the subject up because of that evaluation
1204 process, because some of the questions were about their
1205 understanding of what year 11 is going to be like, and the
1206 conversations that came out of that probably allowed the kids to
1207 ask the questions they had about their perceptions about the
1208 arts.

1209

1210 So formal feedback is considered carefully, and other feedback
1211 to assist with individual development would be personal, like
1212 personal evaluations to see where they see themselves going as a
1213 group; those are the sorts of questions I ask this year 11 class.

Appendix A: 4

Interview with Ruth

Artist, Mayflower Primary School

7 September 2001

1 Su-Lin: How did you come into drama in education, and why?

2

3 Ruth: I started teaching speech and drama - that was the first point of
4 contact in using drama in teaching. And to take your diploma for
5 speech and drama, you had to be teaching for a while. That was in
6 1988. I worked with children in Primary 1s, then 2s and then
7 teenagers. And I discovered that I liked it. At the same time I was
8 doing theatre – mainly performing. But when Rani Moorthy came
9 back with an MA in theatre philosophy in theatre in education in
10 1993, we embarked on our first theatre in education project. And that
11 was because Rani was trained in it. I performed and collaborated with
12 her on producing a Teacher's Pack, about 30 pages long which was
13 given to each school that participated in the TIE program. So working
14 with Rani got me thinking that it's more than just teaching, there are
15 other possibilities. That was when I concentrated in exploring drama
16 as a tool in itself, from 1993 onwards.

17

18 Su-Lin: How about your own background with drama? Why did you even
19 consider taking speech and drama?

20

21 Ruth: Because of my previous experiences at my (Primary and Secondary)
22 school, Katong Convent. I think the school was extremely progressive
23 where the Principal at that time was very much into speech, creative
24 writing and choral reading. The school had a great tradition in
25 creating and performing. And every time we had a school event, Book
26 and Music Week, National Day, an Easter Festival, any celebration,
27 and because we are a Catholic school, we had a lot of celebrations;
28 there was always a performance.

29

30 And we were always pulled out of class to do a rehearsal, a recital,
31 and the performances we did were as important as academic work. It
32 was never secondary and always part and parcel of our lives in school.
33 On hindsight, it made me feel as if I was in a Performing Arts school.
34 So that was when the interest developed. And the Principal came up
35 with a lot of programs. Like Library Week where we learnt how to
36 manage a library and repair torn books and we ended up reading some
37 of them. She got us to write poems in response to the books we read,
38 and then present them.

39

40 We had speech classes conducted by 2 Irish sisters. They would come

41 and provide reading aloud programs. I can't remember how they fixed
 42 the time-table but I remember even when there was no classroom
 43 available, we would sit in the tuckshop in a circle on the benches and
 44 do our reading aloud. That was our drama class - in the tuckshop.
 45 And we had a lot of fun. The drama was there to support the speech
 46 but sometimes it took over. And we were all willing to stay back after
 47 school for speech and drama if we had to. I learnt improvisation
 48 through these lessons at the age of 9! The sisters believed that the
 49 learning of speech came through the play-acting. And then of course,
 50 there was a lot of singing, we did musicals, and there were drama
 51 competitions. And that was the core of Katong Convent.
 52
 53
 54 Su-Lin: When did your formal training in drama start?
 55
 56 Ruth: My training has always been with a theatre company. During my time,
 57 there was nowhere to get drama training at a tertiary level in
 58 Singapore. Until I went away to do my M.A. about two years ago.
 59 One of the courses I took was on Healing and Performance. This had
 60 an education component. And for another semester I worked with
 61 Boal. And that had to do with drama as a tool to empower the
 62 oppressed. I think the students in Singapore are the oppressed.
 63
 64 I think my work in Singapore is slightly different. I don't just look at
 65 DIE or TIE as just one way of approaching drama in the curriculum. I
 66 see drama in the curriculum as a tool that can be used to enhance any
 67 subject studied, like History, or Civics. And the third model I see is
 68 using drama as a skill development in itself. And in the skill
 69 development itself, the other things we want to achieve like DIE, and
 70 drama in a curriculum program can also be fostered. And the fourth is
 71 the speech and drama aspect where drama is a portion of speech.
 72
 73 Su-Lin: So after doing drama in education for 8 years now, what would you
 74 say is your personal philosophy towards it?
 75
 76 Ruth: My main philosophy would be that drama is a tool to open up certain
 77 doors within a child. That is my main aim and every time I use drama,
 78 that is what I think about. It is like a key. And I keep on using it even
 79 if you're not going to become an actor because that is not the point.
 80 Drama is not going to make you an actor but it's going to open up
 81 other doors for you in certain aspects of your personality. Something
 82 that can unlock something else.
 83
 84 Su-Lin: How do you view your role as a facilitator?
 85
 86 Ruth: It's always something to do with the arts. Even if I do drama, I will

87 always incorporate something else, like movement that is dance-
88 based, music, visual art. But drama is my forte so I fall back on it. I
89 interpret character, role, function, space, in a very dramatic way. So I
90 still come from that as my background.

91

92 Su-Lin: And how do you view drama's role in education?

93

94 Ruth: Drama is important in schools because it develops the child beyond
95 the IQ level. It develops their EQ in an experiential manner that is not
96 currently available in the Singapore education system with its
97 academic approach. Because academic learning is through rote
98 learning, regurgitation of facts. In drama there is teamwork. And even
99 if you choose not to participate, you are still learning from observing.
100 And drama is physical. In academic-based subjects, you only use one
101 frame which is the brain, the Cartesian mode. But in drama you
102 engage your mind, emotions and your body and you need to try out
103 your ideas, have them assessed and critiqued. And it comes straight
104 from your gut, your instincts. I did a lot of project work when I was in
105 school but the ones I remember the most are those that involve drama.
106 Because drama involves physical work and certain mental processes.
107 It is very specific. And you're responsible for other people. Even
108 though your role might be small, you are responsible for the whole
109 team. It is so affecting. So it's not just the mental but your whole
110 presence is needed.

111

112 Su-Lin: Do you think it's a benefit working outside of the school system?

113

114 Ruth: There are benefits and there are disadvantages. The benefits are that
115 we can take an objective look at how a school is being run and then
116 offer solutions; like a management consultant. And coming from the
117 outside, you can collaborate with a teacher because the teacher has
118 academic strengths and knows the curriculum better, and I know my
119 drama well, so we can work together. We both have specialized fields
120 and so the potential for collaboration is good.

121

122 The other advantage I can think of is that you are not involved in the
123 running of the school. And that is a heavy responsibility – the politics,
124 the administrative difficulties. And drama, like any other subject
125 requires a lot of planning and our education system is such that our
126 planning suffers because of the administrative work. Being outside of
127 the system, I can focus on planning. And you are also seen as a friend
128 by the students and so you can reach out to the students better.

129

130 The disadvantages are that because I am not in the system, I am only
131 able to manage consult. So some of my plans might not pull through
132 because I am not there to see it pull through. And some of the schools

133 might not agree to it because they are wary of it. And if it does not
134 pull through, it ends there and then. The second disadvantage is that
135 because you're not there full-time, many teachers think that you don't
136 understand the problem. And because of that, you can create
137 suspicion and antagonism. So instead of good collaboration, you get a
138 bad one.
139
140 Also, sometimes you treat it as a job, you come once to the school,
141 and that's it. There is no follow-up. That's why a one year program is
142 not beneficial. It needs to be two years and more to see the full term
143 benefit in a school. But you are an outsider and cannot determine the
144 policy that is going to be made within the school. You're affecting the
145 students, but you can't affect the system so much. So you hope you
146 meet the right Principal.
147
148 And Singapore does not have an arts education or drama education
149 society where they can really galvanize or advocate for something.
150 There is no advocacy work right now, as yet. But there is a lot of
151 work to be done. There needs to be a larger umbrella to see that the
152 work is being professionally done. All of us are free agents and could
153 potentially do more harm than good if we don't have proper training.
154 And the other disadvantage is that as outsiders to the school, we can
155 never fully understand the situation in the school enough because we
156 are not always there. At Mayflower I feel that I understand the school
157 better now after 2 years but even then, as an outsider, there are still
158 obstacles.
159

Appendix A: 5

Interview with Jessie

Drama Teacher, Merlion Secondary School

1 September 2001

1 Su-Lin: Why did you decide to become a teacher?

2

3 Jessie: It was more for financial reasons as with a teaching scholarship, I
4 would be getting paid to become a teacher. In return, I would be
5 bonded for five years. But after teaching, I realize that I am quite
6 good at it, and enjoy it. I love the interaction with the kids.

7

8 Drama is also something that I fell into, rather than being out there
9 looking for it. I took double majors and one of them was drama.
10 There was an audition going on and I was deciding what to take for
11 my major. I followed my friends for the drama audition and got in.
12 The first two years were a bit of a mess. I love performing, I love
13 drama but I really didn't like the environment in the school. But in
14 my third and fourth year I had more of a fixed goal where I wanted
15 to do my Honors. So I decided to work for it and that is when the
16 passion really started developing. I discovered that I could excel at
17 a subject which is very rare for me as I am not academically
18 inclined. But through drama I realized that I can actually think! So
19 I proceeded and got a first class Honors. And so here I am.

20

21 Su-Lin: So your introduction to drama was at the tertiary level?

22

23 Jessie: Yes. I was initially on probation at the National Institute of
24 Education because of my lack of background in drama. But I've
25 always had an interest in drama but never given an opportunity to
26 pursue it. In secondary school I was a rebel and I started the
27 detention class. I spent most of my time outside the Principal's
28 office. Even if I wanted to join something like the English
29 Language Drama and Debating Society, they wouldn't accept me
30 because I was such a trouble-maker. Same thing for Junior
31 College. They had plays and everything but I wasn't a likely
32 candidate for a play because I didn't speak with an accent, and I
33 wasn't pally with the whole group of theatre people.

34

35 And that's why I'm here. I'm here and not at a more elite school
36 because the students there are already given an opportunity so
37 much more than kids here. And over here, it's a nice environment
38 but yet the kids are not given an opportunity. If I wasn't here, there
39 wouldn't be a drama program. They weren't looking for a drama
40 teacher. It's just that I wanted to try out a drama program and the
41 Principal agreed. And I think the kids are getting a lot out of the
42 program. I'm certain they are.

43 Su-Lin: What is your philosophy towards teaching?
 44
 45 Jessie: This is from my valedictorian speech. To reach out to the last kid
 46 in the row who is straying the furthest away from education
 47 because he/she does not know what education means. Reaching out
 48 to that last kid. To make the last kid sit in front, because he or she
 49 is now interested. So to get kids interested in learning, to get them
 50 excited about learning. There's a lot more to educating. Education
 51 is about empowerment and not about regurgitation which is what a
 52 lot of kids think it is. And to bring the message across that there
 53 can be joy and fun in learning. I never experienced joy and fun in
 54 learning at all till the last years of my University education.
 55
 56 Su-Lin: So what do you think is your role as a teacher?
 57
 58 Jessie: I inspire more than nurture. I cannot be a nurturer because I teach
 59 over 200 kids a week and I only see them for such a short period of
 60 time. I am a nurturer for the kids I see in my own form class but I
 61 don't think that is my primary role. I see myself as an inspirer. The
 62 person who opens doors so that kids can get an understanding of
 63 the world and themselves. The person who is giving them the key
 64 and empowering them. Occasionally I'm like a farmer who plants
 65 the seed and waters them and puts fertilizers but that's only limited
 66 to a small bunch of people like my senior students who are leaving.
 67 It takes a lot out of me. But more often than not, I see myself as an
 68 evangelical, inspirational person. The one who plants the seeds, but
 69 not necessarily the one who watches them grow, or puts the
 70 fertilizer and watches them grow. I want to see myself as a person
 71 who helps build bridges, the one who can heal in a sense. Heal
 72 misconceptions, problems, relationships.
 73
 74 Su-Lin: What do you think is drama's role in education?
 75
 76 Jessie: I'm speaking from experience. Drama's role in my life was one of
 77 empowerment. It allowed me to see that there is a world beyond
 78 myself, and it gave me an opportunity to participate in this world.
 79 It is the empowerment of a voice, of my voice. Knowing that I can
 80 have an opinion, and my opinion may be wrong or right and most
 81 of the time it's a grey area but I can speak, and I can have
 82 something to say. And this led to, therefore, I will express myself;
 83 therefore, I will not be inhibited; therefore, I can feel more
 84 confident because I know where I am and I know where I stand,
 85 and I can face a whole group of people who are intimidating and
 86 yet I know I can be strong because I have an opinion, I have a
 87 thought and I know I can contribute. Whether you can accept it or
 88 not, I can still contribute. This is empowerment. And drama did
 89 that for me.

90 So what is drama's role in education? The voice. To give students
 91 the voice. I believe in all the personal development arguments like
 92 giving confidence, expression etc. but all this means nothing if you
 93 don't know your worth. It will be an empty vessel if there's
 94 nothing inside. Having that something inside which needs to be
 95 released will motivate the rest of things to happen. And you will no
 96 longer be an empty vessel inside.
 97

98 Su-Lin: What is it about drama that allows this to happen? Can you
 99 pinpoint it?
 100

101 Jessie: Reflection in a mirror. Through drama process you get a clearer
 102 picture hopefully of yourself. It is a reflection of the world as well.
 103 A reflection is a separate reality. It's not your own reality. In that
 104 sense you get a detached view on things. With detachment, you're
 105 better able to get a macro view of yourself, your friends, issues,
 106 concerns ... you get a better sense of things. Drama provides that.
 107 And that's on one level.
 108

109 On the other level, drama lets you step inside. It draws you in to
 110 create your own world, and the real world as well. It draws you
 111 into a world where you are experimenting with your imagination;
 112 things you wouldn't think of or say sometimes; things that are
 113 taboo. You are allowed to experiment it in a safe and secure space.
 114 It is the idealistic world I suppose, hopefully. Where everybody
 115 works as a team, where everybody plays games and enjoys
 116 themselves. It is this idealistic world that builds trust. And with
 117 trust, you are able to develop a better relationship with each other.
 118 To go beyond the superficial level and move on to a more
 119 meaningful level. So drama draws you in on one hand, and gives
 120 you enough tools for reflection so that you are better able to make
 121 sense of what is going on.
 122

123 Su-Lin: Are you familiar with the term aesthetic education?
 124

125 Jessie: Yes. Peter Abbs and the 4 levels – Forming, Making, Presenting,
 126 Responding. Forming is the place where students gather to
 127 brainstorm ideas, get a hold of what they want to talk about and
 128 develop and explore. Making is when they work together as a
 129 team. Each one contributes a bit and that's where the learning
 130 through drama perhaps comes in. The idea of give and take. The
 131 idea of how to operate as human beings in a society comes in.
 132 Presenting. Presenting to an audience, presenting to ... and again,
 133 presenting involves heaps and heaps of teamwork and presenting
 134 incorporates the aspect of learning about drama. Learning the
 135 language of drama, learning the different styles; lighting, sound,
 136 character, plot, theme; the different aspects of the theory of drama;
 137 what makes drama.

138 And then the reflection bit. I think that's the most important aspect
 139 because every experience is only an experience unless you have
 140 reflected on it. I find it a very difficult step to take in my lessons
 141 because we try to see the tangible, we try to grasp the tangible, and
 142 reflection exists in the intangible. And so you want to say things
 143 about the experience but in a structure, sometimes I overlook the
 144 reflection because you think these kids have gotten a lot and you
 145 might overlook it. And I have a tendency to do that. So it's
 146 something that I'm trying to implement. I believe in it.
 147

148 Su-Lin: Do you believe that an aesthetic education is one about the senses
 149 as well?
 150

151 Jessie: Yes. A thought that you have cannot just be a cognitive thought. It
 152 will lean on your views about life. And your views about life will
 153 definitely be developed from your experiences with life. And your
 154 experiences with life come from the heart, and not the mind.
 155

156 Su-Lin: I feel that education here emphasizes the cognitive and neglects
 157 feelings and emotions. To the extent that students don't know how
 158 to express what they feel. Do you agree?
 159

160 Jessie: I have two views on this. I agree with you that Singapore education
 161 downplays a lot on emotions because everything has to be logical,
 162 everything has to be argued, everything has to have a structure.
 163 Therefore, where are emotions? You cannot place emotions in a
 164 jar. How can you contain emotions. So yes, I do agree with that.
 165

166 Do my students feel? I think it's back to that opinion matter. It's all
 167 related. Opinion is not from the mind. Opinion is from the heart as
 168 well. Like I said, you cannot develop a thought unless you have
 169 experience. So it's all related. What the students lack is the
 170 courage to say I feel something because they've never been
 171 allowed to feel. They are not trained in expressing their feelings
 172 and emotions. Perhaps that is the first step. Perhaps the first step is
 173 to draw all the feelings and emotions out of you.
 174

175 But I believe there is a second step. The kids I am teaching are
 176 undergoing puberty. They feel a lot and I'm not trying to downplay
 177 their feelings, but most of the time, they are over-generalized.
 178 There is a need to structure these feelings and thoughts and
 179 channel them somewhere. And say, "ok, this is the limit, don't go
 180 over there, let's think rational thoughts here". So it requires a
 181 balance to draw it out, and then sieving it and channeling it. It can
 182 be detrimental to the kid if you get all these feelings out and then
 183 there's nowhere to go. They only get frustrated, they only get more
 184 confused. So that's where the reflection part comes in as well.

185 Su-Lin: What is your role in this school?
186

187 Jessie: I'm a drama teacher in the school. I also teach English but Drama
188 is my main subject. I teach it during curriculum time. I also handle
189 the Drama Co-Curricular Activity. I started up the Drama Club
190 where I select scripts, conduct workshops, coach, etc. And I am
191 also responsible for developing drama within the school, and
192 cluster. So this means I organize events like camps, brainstorm for
193 ways to incorporate drama into the curriculum, I come up with new
194 ways of using drama as a tool. This is so that the whole school will
195 get to experience drama, and not only through lessons, but also
196 incorporated into other activities. And then there are the other ad-
197 hoc school activities and events which I contribute to.
198

199 Su-Lin: How long have you been teaching for?
200

201 Jessie: Slightly more than one and a half years.
202

203 Su-Lin: And you teach lower secondary students?
204

205 Jessie: Yes. The secondary ones and twos. I take the secondary twos in
206 semester 1 and secondary ones in semester two. This is to allow for
207 continuity from sec 1 to 2. So each group of twenty students only
208 take drama for a term.
209

210 Su-Lin: How many teaching hours do you have?
211

212 Jessie: Something like 20 hours which is a lot. My other friends are
213 getting 18 – 19 hours. And they don't even need to coach a CCA
214 group. Besides I'm involved in some planning in the school
215 because Drama is being developed as a niche area at Merlion. I
216 think the school seems to have this idea that since I take 20
217 students in the class, my workload is lighter.
218

219 Su-Lin: They have misconceptions about drama. Which leads me to my
220 next question. How much support would you say you have for
221 drama in this school?
222

223 Jessie: My Principal does not stop me from doing anything I want. I
224 suppose that is support since there's nothing blocking me from
225 doing things. But the support that I would like is the moral support.
226 I mean I'm doing the work and I'm fine with that but it would be
227 nice if I could get a pat on the shoulder and be appreciated. So I
228 acknowledge that I get support in the freedom to do the things I
229 want but what I would really prefer is to be appreciated for what I
230 am doing. Perhaps this appreciation comes from the freedom I get
231 to do whatever..

232 Su-Lin: How do you plan the syllabus?
 233
 234 Jessie: I have a huge variety of activities because every group is different.
 235 Even within the same level of students, what might work for an
 236 Express class might not work for a Normal Technical class. I plan
 237 according to what I've learnt from teaching the previous batch of
 238 students. Like I found that process drama doesn't work with the
 239 sec 1s because they couldn't buy into the make-believe world. Or
 240 rather they were not enjoying the subject enough to put themselves
 241 inside the make-believe world because they don't want to look
 242 stupid. Then I tried looking at scripts. Taking a more traditional
 243 approach where we looked at characters, elements of drama, etc.
 244 Again, that seemed fine but there wasn't much enjoyment. One
 245 term of about 10 weeks is very short and by the time they went
 246 anywhere with it, the term was already over. So it was a bummer.
 247
 248 This year I tried theatre sports and it works very well. It is in the
 249 nature of our students to be very competitive and if this element is
 250 present, then the students move from the "I want to beat you" point
 251 of view. Here's the catch, when they find the subject more
 252 interesting they then want to develop it more. So that's the method
 253 I use. And without the students' interest, you can't do something if
 254 they find it long-drawn. And drama can be long-drawn; there are
 255 different characters and you are required to suspend your belief
 256 and so unless the students are interested, they are not going to buy
 257 into it. So that wasn't very good. With theatre sports, the students
 258 are interested, it's short-paced, it's funny, people get to act for 2 –
 259 3 minutes, it's also competitive which is something they like. So
 260 hopefully they get a feel for it and they enjoy it. And when they
 261 come back in Sec. 2, they're more willing to buy into the make-
 262 believe.
 263
 264 I still believe in process drama but I think a lot of preparation work
 265 needs to be in place before it can take effect. Preparation work that
 266 needs to take into consideration the teaching space, culture, and the
 267 issue that we're going to deal with. When I was taking process
 268 drama with my sec. 2s last semester, we were dealing with the
 269 issue of parent and child relationships. Other issues could be on
 270 love, friendship; things that interest the students.
 271
 272 Su-Lin: So you plan and implement your lesson plans. Do you need to
 273 submit a copy of your plans to the school?
 274
 275 Jessie: No. I used to be very detailed in my lesson plans but I no longer do
 276 that. Maybe I'm jaded. I know what I'm going to do for the entire
 277 term but I found that it changes with the student cohort, and so I
 278 adapt. I found that I planned a whole term's work but I had to
 279 throw so much of it away because it didn't seem suitable at certain

280 points, or there were better approaches for different classes, etc. So
 281 right now I have a brief plan and I adapt and am a lot more
 282 flexible.
 283

284 Su-Lin: You mentioned just now that most of the support you get is in
 285 terms of infrastructure. Do you wish you had more time to do
 286 drama?
 287

288 Jessie: Yes. It is too short. We need to re-look at the curriculum, to re-
 289 look at the amount of time allocated to drama. It will affect the sec
 290 1s and sec 2s, and English as well because I teach both. I am trying
 291 to get my friend who is drama trained as well into the school and if
 292 that is successful, I need to plan what she is going to do. So I
 293 would like to re-look at things.
 294

295 I take 9 classes of drama per week and I am trying to build rapport
 296 with the kids. I know I can but I need more time and more
 297 concentrated work. It can't be just touch and go. And it's kind of a
 298 waste because we have something good going and I'm trying to be
 299 a nurturer but perhaps I've never seen that as my role because I've
 300 never been given an opportunity.
 301

302 Su-Lin: Do you manage to reflect on your own teaching, and how do you
 303 do it?
 304

305 Jessie: It used to be more precise and concise when I had detailed lesson
 306 plans. I would reflect every time after a lesson, and type it in, and
 307 make judgments about what to do. But now without the time to
 308 think and with me running around all the time, it's difficult. And
 309 I'm not willing to sacrifice my personal time. I'm not. I think my
 310 reflection has diminished. The reflection that I do is more for next
 311 year. It's incorporated more into the planning than a separate time
 312 for reflection. And it's a bit difficult when I don't have someone
 313 to bounce off ideas with. It's difficult for other teachers to
 314 understand even though I'm speaking English. It's like a different
 315 language. And I don't blame them because they are not in this
 316 field.
 317

318 Su-Lin: Do you know if other teachers in this school use drama in the
 319 classroom?
 320

321 Jessie: Not that I know of. The other teachers don't approach me about
 322 drama. I'm not sure whether it's a rank thing where they are all
 323 more senior than I am. And I don't feel comfortable stepping over
 324 my area and telling them what to do. I did use to give them lesson
 325 plans, like this is good for voice etc. but I never asked them how it
 326 went because I assumed that if they did try it out, they would let
 327 me know. These are English teachers who are willing to try. But I

328 feel that I am in an awkward position. Sometimes I overhear
 329 conversations of other teachers using drama but they never come to
 330 me directly to talk about it. I think maybe it's because they
 331 experienced failure in the classroom. But what they may not
 332 understand is that you need to do warm-ups, and you need a
 333 conducive environment for drama. And maybe the teachers don't
 334 want to come to me because it seems that on the surface it is
 335 working for my lesson. These are the vibes that I am getting but I
 336 don't want to talk about it with them and get involved in the
 337 politics of things.
 338

339 Su-Lin: Do you get the support of the parents for drama?
 340

341 Jessie: I think now that drama is acknowledged as a niche in the school, it
 342 is easier to work with the parents. Before this they were also quite
 343 supportive because the government is going on about creativity. I
 344 haven't received any complaints.
 345

346 Su-Lin: What does it mean when you say drama is a niche?
 347

348 Jessie: As far as the school is concerned, it means that you get more
 349 money for a particular area so that you can develop it. Because you
 350 have earned a certain status for it.
 351

352 Su-Lin: Have you been asked to do drama presentations for the school?
 353

354 Jessie: Yes. We have performed at assembly before. And when I was
 355 doing my attachment to this school, I organized a lunch-time
 356 performance in the studio which was open to other students to
 357 come and watch, and the room was packed with an audience. So I
 358 think the school prefers bigger performances but I would rather
 359 perform in a smaller, intimate space where the actors, props and
 360 performance would be honored for what it is rather than be faced
 361 with the school hall where you have to worry with the
 362 technicalities. Performances that are works-in-progress, and where
 363 the audience can give feedback as well. Unfortunately, I'm very
 364 reluctant to suggest events like that now lest I get more work to do.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Appendix B

1.	The Five Key Ideas Behind Singapore 21	1
2.	The Desired Outcomes of Education	2
3.	The 8 Intelligences	4
4.	Broad Research Questions for the Five Dimensions	5
5.	Matrix of Research Settings and Research Areas	7
6.	List of Research Participants in Brisbane	9
7.	2010 Queensland State Education	10
8.	Aims of Schools Observed in Brisbane	12
9.	A Brief History of Drama in Education in Queensland	14
10.	The <i>Development Through Drama</i> Program	15
11.	Criteria for Assessment for <i>Development Through Drama</i>	18
12.	Field Log Entries	19

Appendix B: 1

THE FIVE KEY IDEAS BEHIND SINGAPORE 21

1. Every Singaporean Matters

- The idea that every Singaporean is important and has a contribution to make.

2. Opportunities For All

- This idea is related to the first and is an assurance that every Singaporean will be catered for.

3. Strong Families: Our Foundation and Our Future

- The idea that strong families are key to meeting the needs of Singaporeans and must remain the source for giving and receiving care and support.

4. The Singapore Heartbeat

- The idea of fostering an emotional rootedness to Singapore through a shared sense of belonging, a collective memory of a shared past, and total commitment to a shared future.

5. Active Citizens: Making A Difference to Society

- The idea that every Singaporean has an obligation to society and the country that nurtures them, and therefore should play their part.

Appendix B: 2

THE DESIRED OUTCOMES OF EDUCATION

Intermediate Outcomes of Education

The following outcomes outline what students should achieve at each stage of schooling. Each stage builds upon what has been achieved before, and lays the foundation for the continuation of a strand to the next level. The resultant outcomes of education can be found on the following page.

PRIMARY	SECONDARY	JUNIOR COLLEGE
At the end of Primary School, pupils should:	At the end of Secondary School, students should:	At the end of Junior College, students should:
<ul style="list-style-type: none">• be able to distinguish right from wrong	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• have moral integrity	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• be resilient and resolute
<ul style="list-style-type: none">• have learnt to share and put others first	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• have care and concern for others	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• have a sound sense of social responsibility
<ul style="list-style-type: none">• be able to build friendships with others	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• be able to work in teams and value every contribution	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• understanding what it takes to inspire and motivate others
<ul style="list-style-type: none">• have a lively curiosity about things	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• be enterprising and innovative	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• have an entrepreneurial and creative spirit
<ul style="list-style-type: none">• be able to think for and express themselves	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• possess a broad-based foundation for further education	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• be able to think independently and creatively
<ul style="list-style-type: none">• take pride in their work	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• believe in their ability	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• strive for excellence
<ul style="list-style-type: none">• have cultivated healthy habits	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• have an appreciation for aesthetics	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• have a zest for life
<ul style="list-style-type: none">• love Singapore	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• know and believe in Singapore	<ul style="list-style-type: none">• understand what it takes to lead Singapore

Outcomes of Education

ALL POST-SECONDARY AND TERTIARY STUDENTS

Students should:

- be morally upright, be culturally rooted yet understanding and respecting differences, be responsible to family, community and country
- believe in our principles of multi-racialism and meritocracy, appreciate the national constraints but see the opportunities
- be constituents of a gracious society
- be willing to strive, take pride in work, value working with others
- be able to think, reason and deal confidently with the future, have courage and conviction in facing adversity
- be able to seek, process and apply knowledge
- be innovative – have a spirit of continual improvement, a lifelong habit of learning and an enterprising spirit in undertakings
- think global, but be rooted to Singapore

POTENTIAL LEADERS

Potential Leaders should:

- be committed to improving society
- be proactive in surmounting our constraints
- have compassion towards others
- be able to inspire, motivate and draw out the best from others
- be able to chart our destiny and lead
- be able to forge breakthroughs in a knowledge-based economy
- be creative and imaginative
- have the tenacity to fight against the odds and not quit

Appendix B: 3

THE 8 INTELLIGENCES

1. **Linguistic**
- consists of the ability to think in words and to use language to express and appreciate complex meanings.
2. **Logical-mathematical**
- makes it possible to calculate, quantify, consider propositions and hypotheses, and carry out complex mathematical operations.
3. **Spatial**
- instills the capacity to think in three-dimensional ways as do sailors, pilots, sculptors, painters and architects. It enables one to perceive external and internal imagery, to recreate, transform, or modify images, to navigate oneself and objects through space, and to produce or decode graphic information
4. **Musical**
- is evident in individuals who possess a sensitivity to pitch, melody, rhythm, and tone. Those demonstrating this intelligence include musicians, composers, conductors, critics, instrument makers, as well as sensitive listeners
5. **Bodily-kinaesthetic**
- enables one to manipulate objects and fine-tune physical skills
6. **Interpersonal**
- the capacity to understand and interact effectively with others
7. **Intrapersonal**
- the ability to construct an accurate perception of oneself and to use such knowledge in planning and directing one's life
8. **Naturalist**
- consists of observing patterns in nature, identifying and classifying objects, and understanding natural and human-made systems.

Appendix B: 4

BROAD RESEARCH QUESTIONS FOR THE FIVE DIMENSIONS

The Intentional Dimension

- Focuses on the goals or aims formulated for the school or classroom

1. What is the aim of education in this setting?
2. What is the aim of drama education in this setting?
3. How are these aims set?
4. Is there a 'hidden curriculum' in this setting?

The Structural Dimension

- Focuses on the formal structures within a school setting

1. What are the necessary resources to enable drama in education to take place in this setting?
2. Are they being provided?

The Curricular Dimension

- Focuses on the content, activities and goals of the curriculum

1. What does the drama curriculum look like?
2. How was the curriculum planned?
3. How is the drama curriculum being carried out in schools?
4. Are there any other activities or programs in the school that complement the drama curriculum?

The Pedagogical Dimension

- Focuses on teachers and their practice

1. What are the teacher's attitudes to drama education in this setting?
2. How does the teacher conduct the drama lesson?
3. What is the teacher's relationship with the students like?
4. Does the teacher form partnerships with other teachers or drama practitioners in teaching drama?
5. How often, and where does a teacher go to get further training?

The Evaluative Dimension

- Focuses on assessment practices in schools

1. What are the aims of assessment in this setting?
2. How are these aims set?
3. How important is assessment in this school?
4. How is drama assessed in this school?
5. How are teachers assessed in this school?

Appendix B: 5

MATRIX OF RESEARCH SETTINGS AND RESEARCH AREAS

The matrix is represented over two pages:

Field Settings/ The 5 Dimensions	In Queensland				In Singapore	
	Observing drama classes in primary schools		Observing drama classes in high schools		Observing drama classes in schools that have drama in the curriculum	
	A pilot school for the new drama syllabus	A school not using the new drama syllabus <i>(suitable research setting not available)</i>	A public school	A private school	A primary school	A secondary school
The Intentional Dimension						
The Structural Dimension						
The Curricular Dimension						
The Pedagogical Dimension						
The Evaluative Dimension						

Field Settings/ The 5 Dimensions	In Queensland and Singapore	
	Interviewing the teachers/artists of the classes observed	Interviewing key players in drama education
The Intentional Dimension		
The Structural Dimension		
The Curricular Dimension		
The Pedagogical Dimension		
The Evaluative Dimension		

Appendix B: 6

LIST OF RESEARCH PARTICIPANTS IN BRISBANE

(in no particular order)

1. **Jenny**, Specialist Drama Teacher, Blessed Heart College
2. **Donna**, Head of Department, Performing Arts, Springvale State High School
3. **Karen**, Head of Department, Performing Arts, All Saints College
4. **Dr. Brad Haseman**, Coordinator, Postgraduate Education and Research Training, Creative Industries Research and Applications Center, Queensland University of Technology
5. **Dr. John O'Toole**, Associate Professor in Drama, Faculty of Education, Griffith University
6. **Madonna Stinson**, Project Officer (The Arts), Queensland School Curriculum Council
7. **Adrienne Jones**, Head of Review Panel (Drama), Board of Senior Secondary School Studies, and Education Liaison Officer (Secondary), Queensland Arts Council
8. **Susan Richer**, Program Director, Out of The Box Festival, and Associate Producer, Stage X Festival
9. **Mitchell Holmes**, Education Liaison Officer, Queensland Theatre Company
10. **Sean Mee**, Artistic Director, La Boite Theatre

Appendix B:7

2010 QUEENSLAND STATE EDUCATION

2010 is a report released by the State of Queensland (Department of Education). It outlines the government's vision for education in this decade and provides policy for all state run, and funded schools in the state. It is a recognition by the Queensland government of the 'forces of change' that are taking place in economies and societies globally. The policy aims to prepare young Queenslanders for the new economy; recognizing that education is a crucial place to start:

If we in Queensland want access to the benefits of the knowledge economy of the future, we have to ensure the education levels and skills of our people are up with the best in the world. Students who complete year 12 or its equivalent have better life chances. Increasing the number of our young people who achieves this gives them a "fair go" at life's opportunities and will improve our economic performance. It is the basis of a Smart state.

(Education Queensland, 2000: 3)

Being a Smart state in Queensland means becoming 'a learning society'. This society requires people who are 'adaptable' and its key resources will be 'human and social capital' and not just physical and material resources (ibid: 8).

2010 takes into account the shifts in education that have arisen from a combination of economic factors as well as developments in societies. It realizes the importance of making links with community and partnerships, stating that it is the responsibility of everyone – students, teachers, parents, businesses and the community – to make the vision possible (ibid: 3). The document also calls attention to the shrinking world made smaller through developments in technology, and the increase of information that is now widely available. This throws up questions on learning – what to learn, and how to learn.

These 'forces of change' are summarized into five categories under the heading of, 'learning to live with complexity, uncertainty and diversity', thereby reinforcing the need for 'adaptable' people (ibid: 4 – 8). They are:

- **Changes to families**

This takes into account the change in demographics in family structures and the eroding of family values. The effects of which are being reported by schools where teachers observe 'anxiety, depression, lack of discipline, aggression ... and a greater need for adult role models' in their students. This places new pressures on schools to provide students with 'high levels of social support' and creates the need for 'parenting education'.

- **A cultural melting pot**

2010 acknowledges that Australia is a multicultural society and the formation of its identity will involve knowing and understanding its people's diverse histories and cultures.

- **Economic change**

This point highlights the changes that are taking place in society whereby jobs are shifting to 'communication, service and knowledge-based industries'. This will place an emphasis on 'the individual's interpersonal skills' when seeking employment.

- **Information technology**

The importance and necessity of information technology is made clear in *2010* in order to be a Smart state. It states that 'learning will be transformed' because of it and that teachers will need to harness information technology to 'manage the learning of their students'. They will also need to help their students be critical of the increased load of information they will be receiving.

- **Workforce skills and competitiveness**

This goes to the heart of the *2010* policy whereby increasing the number of students that complete Year 12 in schools is a top priority. This increases their chances of gaining enough knowledge and skills for the economy. It also means strengthening the co-ordination of school and post-school programs.

The impact of this on schools for the next decade would be creating 'safe, tolerant and disciplined environments' where young people prepare to be 'active and reflective' citizens with 'a disposition to lifelong learning'. Consequently, these Australians will be able to contribute to the wider society as well as globally.

Appendix B: 8

AIMS OF SCHOOLS OBSERVED IN BRISBANE

A. Blessed Heart College

Mission Statement:

Blessed Heart College is a faith community made up of parents, staff, and students, striving to be “of on heart and mind on the way to God”.

The College seeks to develop practical living skills in each student and to promote eager use of the intellect. Blessed Heart College encourages **the development of individual strengths**. It seeks to make school learning relevant to the wider society and to prepare students for their future, whether in the fields of higher education, employment or leisure.

Educational Aims and Practices:

Personal growth of each student is the starting point of Blessed Heart’s education. The College is concerned with **affective, intellectual, social, cultural, religious and physical development**. It **does not attempt to conform students** to the established order of society, but seeks to develop the person from within to become a fully integrated human being. It seeks to stir in its students the ambition to contribute to the redevelopment and renewal of society. Above all it desires to instill the attitude of community responsibility and service.

B. Springvale State High School

School Motto:

The Pursuit of Excellence Through Learning

Educational Aims and Practices:

This focus on excellence is practiced throughout our curriculum and extra-curricular activities, with emphasis on **developing individual students to their fullest potential**. The school aims to develop confident, self-directed knowledgeable people **who think creatively and critically** and are equipped to participate in society’s decision making process. Students on exit should be morally and socially responsible, employable and capable of enjoying life and prepared for further learning, and future employment.

C. All Saints College

School Motto:

Striving for excellence in Christian coeducation

At All Saints we recognize that **each student has God-given talents and abilities**, and that a successful education is not measured in grades alone, but in **the realization of one's true potential**.

Educational Aims and Practices:

All Saints' students experience an education program characterized by a strong commitment to the Christian faith, firm but caring discipline, and the expectation that they will achieve the highest standards of which they are capable. They leave All Saints with an optimistic attitude to life, **enquiring minds**, and the skills to make the most of the opportunities they are given. The programs and facilities ensure that students have **a solid grounding in traditional academic studies, are confident in using today's technology, appreciate their cultural heritage, and enjoy sporting and recreational activities**.

At All Saints, discussion and debate which often lead to important changes, are encouraged within the student body and between students and staff. We **discourage unthinking conformity in students and we encourage the development of each as a unique individual**.

Appendix B: 9

A BRIEF HISTORY OF DRAMA IN EDUCATION IN QUEENSLAND

Queensland has a tradition of speech and drama being offered mostly in private schools since the early 20th century. These programs were very strong and consisted mainly of poetry recitation and performance, dramatic monologues, prose extracts, etc. Speech and drama was very popular by the early 1970s. Simultaneously, there was an increase in interest in child-drama, with the ideas of Peter Slade and Brian Way gaining prominence. As a result, group creative drama was introduced, and drama was considered for personal development purposes. As well, some Queensland practitioners had worked with Slade and Way in the UK and brought their methodologies back to Queensland.

The fundamental incident that paved the way for drama to be introduced into the curriculum was when control over the senior school curriculum at tertiary entrance went to schools-based assessment in 1970. Teachers for the first time became the 'creators' and assessors of students' work. Prior to this all assessment had been conducted by state based exams with centralized marking. This led to the formation of the Board of Senior Secondary School Studies (B.S.S.S.S) whose role was to prepare and diversify the curriculum. As a result, the first-ever *Speech and Drama Syllabus* was prepared and accepted into Queensland schools in the mid-seventies. It had three strands: communication; oral interpretation of literature; and creative drama.

Concurrently, a group of teachers familiar with producing school musicals proposed a subject called Musical Theatre. They developed a theatre syllabus and by 1978, there were two different syllabuses operating in Queensland – *Speech and Drama*, and *Theatre*. These two syllabuses were practiced for a period of time until the B.S.S.S.S combined both to form the *Senior Drama Syllabus*, published in 1993.

The drama syllabus has since been successfully implemented, serviced, evaluated and recently re-written for secondary schools. The Liaison Officer for Drama at the B.S.S.S.S., Yvonne Hucks, stated that drama is offered in 303 senior schools, and taken by 13, 120 students in Queensland (telephone conversion, 13 November 2001). As well, the new *The Arts Years 1 – 10 Syllabus* which contains a drama strand will be implemented in late 2001.

Appendix B: 10

THE DEVELOPMENT THROUGH DRAMA PROGRAM

The Necessary Stage (TNS) believes in the powerful role drama plays in education. It encompasses learning both cognitively and affectively. This is salient especially when learning in the affective mode is largely missing from the Singapore education system. As expressed in the literature review, drama empowers young people to be able to express themselves. It also contributes towards their personal development, enabling them to be confident individuals equipped with necessary life-skills. Alvin Tan, the founder and Artistic Director of TNS on the first drama in education program in 1999, states:

The Branch believes that it is important for young people to develop aesthetic appreciation at an early age. A firm foundation of arts experience needs to be provided to enable the nurturing of creative potential, particularly as the arts are a necessary counterpoint to the rational and pragmatic 'Singaporean psyche'. Young people, in touch with their emotions, can empathize and express themselves more confidently through drama, creating a more socially conscious adult. The arts provides a space for them to process their own identities and relationships to their family, friends, country and the world.

(The Necessary Stage. 2000: 11)

These were some of the arguments used to justify having drama in the school curriculum – aesthetic education, creativity and personal development. TNS also drew on state education policy to bolster these arguments, discussed earlier in the Literature Review. In brief, The Ministry of Education's vision for education, **Thinking Schools, Learning Nation** called for an ability-driven, student-centered education where students' individual abilities and talents need to be identified, nurtured and harnessed (Ministry of Education, 2000: 10). It identified a core set of skills and values such as thinking skills and creativity, which students need to master (ibid: 16). The vision also states that education in Singapore is interested in providing a holistic education for students, where education meant 'developing the child morally, intellectually, physically, socially and aesthetically' (MOE, 2000, <http://www1.moe.edu.sg/desired.htm>).

The resulting drama in education program, *Development Through Drama*, took into account the various components in providing a holistic education to students, but focused its aims more on the social dimension. The aims and desired outcomes of the program were focused more on students' personal development in the form of developing life-skills. This was more popular with schools who were more concerned with developing their students socially than aesthetically. Therefore, drama was used as a tool for personal development, whereby learning took place *through* drama rather than *in* drama.

The aims of the program were:

- To increase students' confidence
- To teach and develop students' social interaction skills
- To teach and develop students' communication and expression skills
- To teach and develop students' thinking skills and creativity

By the end of the program, students would have:

- Cultivated an appreciation for drama
- Developed fundamental relational and transactional skills which are important aspects of social interaction
- Developed confidence and creativity in expressing themselves using their bodies and imagination
- Identified, developed and appreciated their different faculties and talents
- Developed confidence in taking risks and appreciated the process by experimenting in a 'safe' context
- Developed team spirit through group work and understood basic relationships between the individual and the community
- Developed self-discipline and endurance
- Practiced turn-taking and giving feedback to others
- Developed their cognitive, affective and psychomotor skills

The Necessary Stage also reinforced the beliefs schools held of the contribution drama would make to the development of English language skills in students. Specifically, drama supported the English language syllabus' philosophy where 'language is a system for meaning making', 'a means of communication and expression', and 'is determined by purpose, audience, context and culture' (Ministry of Education, 2001: 3). This was an important dimension to most schools, especially public schools as a large cohort of their students came from non-English speaking homes. Therefore, even though improving students' standard of English was never an aim of the program, it was understood that it could contribute effectively toward the learning of the language. As a result, schools often used English periods to justify drama's place in the curriculum.

Development Through Drama has been conducted in two primary, and three secondary schools. It is a thirty-hour program at the primary level, and eighteen-hour program at the secondary level, over the course of a year. The duration of the program is determined by the amount of time schools are willing to create in the curriculum for

drama. Programs mostly last only a year, with no opportunity for continuation. They are conducted by freelance artists hired on a project basis.

Appendix B: 11

CRITERIA FOR ASSESSMENT FOR DEVELOPMENT THROUGH DRAMA

Primary School – Mayflower Primary School

- **Communication**
(allows for verbal, non-verbal, language use/development, actor-audience relationships etc.)
- **Cooperation** (or contribution)
(team work, attitude, respecting others, caring, sharing, relationship with teacher)
- **Creation**
(evaluate students' commitment to creating, both in individual and team creation, including both ideas shared/suggested and practical implementation and development, expression, characterization, roleplay, risk-taking, spontaneity, creative thinking and imagination etc. A broad category for students 'dramatic' engagement or 'creative' involvement and 'output' etc.)

Secondary School – Orchid Secondary School

- Assessment for *Development Through Drama* formed 50% of one out of two assessments for English

- **Work-sharing Day/Presentations (10%)**
 - Group Organization 10 marks (group mark)
 - Idea behind the Presentation 5 marks (group mark)
 - Voice Projection/Diction 5 marks (individual mark)
 - Acting 10 marks (individual mark)
 - Confidence 10 marks (individual mark)
- **Process (40%)**
 - Teamwork (interaction skills) 10 marks
 - Confidence (expression of ideas) 15 marks
 - Creativity (no. of ideas, initiative, problem-solving) 10 marks
 - Discipline (attendance, attire, punctuality) 5 marks

Appendix B: 12

Log No. 7 - 13 May 2001

Page 26

	1	I went to Blessed Heart College last Thurs. 10 May at
	2	8.30 am. I was to interview Jenny first, and then observe
	3	a Year 6 drama class she was teaching at 9.30 am.
	4	
Jenny gave me	5	Blessed Heart is a Catholic school that has both primary
material on the school	6	and high school. It starts from year 5 though. I was
to read - prospectus,	7	not sure where the entrance to the Main Office was
subject guide, etc.	8	and after walking round a bit, I decided to ask a
	9	group of boys where it was. The school is an all
	10	boys school and I noticed students hanging around
	11	for classes, playing with each other, talking, etc.
	12	The Main Office turned out to be pretty obvious and
	13	had a reception area for guests to wait. The lady
	14	at the front desk knew I was coming and proceeded
	15	to inform Jenny I was here. While waiting, I looked
	16	around and saw pictures of the school on the wall -
	17	photos of the old building. There was also a side
	18	table where the waiting area was which had the
	19	school newsletter, yearbooks, and other material
	20	like a Powerhouse booklet and such.
	21	
	22	Jenny then came to the Main Office to meet me
	23	and we took a walk to the staff room. She gave me
	24	a brief history/tour of the school as we were on our
	25	way and I found out that the school used to be an
	26	old farmhouse that was bought over. The school is
	27	pretty old but beautiful in that it has a very homey
	28	feel to it, like All Saints College. Lots of brick and
	29	glass, and land and greenery. The school is made
	30	up of different buildings and the primary and sec.
	31	are separated. The Principal, etc. occupy a wing of
	32	their own in the centre of the school as it seemed.
	33	
	34	The staff room was pretty small but it turned out to
	35	be more of a pantry and meeting area verses stations
	36	for the teachers and I'm sure they sat somewhere
	37	else to do marking and stuff. We then walked to the
	38	primary library where Jenny thought we could do the
	39	interview quietly. Thus I got a chance to see the
	40	library. It was average in size and again cosy looking,
	41	carpeted, with tables, chairs, shelves of books of
	42	course and a few computer terminals clustered
	43	together. We found out that we couldn't do the
	44	interview in there either because a class was coming
	45	in. So back to the staff room we went and settled

	1	on the couch to talk.
	2	
	3	Note: the 2nd half of the interview with Jenny after
	4	the drama class was conducted in the Music Room
	5	instead because it was tea break time and the staff
	6	room would have been too noisy.
	7	
	8	I felt throughout my visit there that the staff were very
	9	warm and welcoming. Jenny introduced me along
	10	the way to people we met and they were all very nice.
	11	The students didn't make much of an impression on
	12	me. Just regular students in uniforms.
	13	
Because a specialist teacher,	14	I found out during the interview that Jenny is a part-
she is sort of in-between?	15	time teacher for drama, or a drama specialist and
	16	teaches there 3 times a week. She rotates between
	17	classes and has 3 areas where she conducts her
	18	classes - the art room, music room and a miscellaneous
	19	room. Space here in the school is a problem and
	20	there is a lack of it. Jenny says there has been a
	21	lack for some time already. She mentions that she
	22	does not have a place to sit and so is like a nomad
	23	and often does her work in the library too. In fact,
	24	while we are at the library, she collects her things
	25	from the office there which she brings to class with
	26	her. She also has a bunch of keys to the rooms she
	27	teaches in and so walks around with them and with
	28	her tray of teaching materials.
	29	
Jenny is like a consultant.	30	An interesting incident happened while I was visiting.
	31	While we were walking to observe the drama class
	32	and waiting outside the art room for the students to
	33	clear out from the previous class, another teacher
	34	of the school approaches Jenny to talk to her. This
	35	teacher's daughter attends a public school which
Drama exposure is uneven in	36	does not have drama but she is interested in it. She
primary schools.	37	has asked her mum to ask Jenny for some scripts
	38	about 'the future' which she can use in her school.
	39	Jenny looks amused and it does strike home the
	40	fact that not all schools in Qld have drama, esp. at
	41	the primary level and that Blessed Heart is special to
	42	have employed a drama specialist.
	43	
	44	Another incident I notice is that a boy seems to be
	45	loitering around the walkway to speak to Jenny
	46	after class and when he gets Jenny's attention,
	47	they exchange short exchanges about something
	48	I don't quite understand but obviously it's something

	1	they do. The exchange is happy and knowing, like
	2	a previous agreement between the both of them. I
	3	guess I can say that Jenny seems to have good
	4	rapport with the teachers and students of the school
	5	so far as I had observed.
	6	
	7	<u>The Drama Lesson (45 min.)</u>
Most of the boys in the school are Italian and Anglo-Saxon, with some Asian students.	8	The class I was observing was 6 Green. It was a
	9	class of 29 boys and 11 year olds. I later found out
	10	that this was the best Year 6 class and although
	11	there was uneven potential in the group, that most of
	12	the boys were enthusiastic and willing to give any-
	13	thing a go. This is what Jenny says about them.
	14	She mentions that the boys in the other 2 classes
	15	are a bit slower and need a lot more effort in teaching
	16	and getting up to do drama.
	17	
	18	Jenny gets the boys to line up outside the classroom
	19	in twos and after they had settled in line, gave them
	20	brief instructions to go in quietly and to form a circle
	21	and sit down. All this I hear from inside the classroom
	22	where I am sitting in a corner on a stool. As men-
	23	tioned earlier, this class is conducted in the art room
The tables and chairs are not put back in their positions after the drama class.	24	where there is an art lesson before. The class before
	25	has had to stack the tables and chairs to the back
	26	of the classroom for the drama lesson. The size of
	27	the room is about 9 x 5 m and has shelves to one
	28	side of the room. There are students' clay works
	29	from the class before drying on the shelves and they
	30	are very cute animals. There are sinks to the front
	31	of the class, art materials on the other side of the
	32	class, a notice board at the back of the classroom.
	33	There are 2 separate entrances to the room; one at
	34	the front and one at the back. The room is airy and
	35	has glass windows and doors, with ceiling fans.
	36	There is a CD player in the room too. The room is
	37	not sound-proof but there do not seem to be other
	38	classrooms that nearby. The art room seems to be
	39	in a block of its own.
	40	
	41	The content for the lesson is on horror stories and
	42	is a continuation from the week before. The title for
	43	unit 1 for semester 1 is 'Shaping Role'. After the
	44	students come in and sit in a circle, Sandra intro-
	45	duces me to the class and they all greet me in
The students don't seem to feel intimidated by me.	46	unison. Before that, the boys look at me as they
	47	come in, surprised to see me there but they do not
	48	stare and soon 'forget' that I am there and I don't

	1	seem to affect them.
	2	
A standard structure to the	3	Jenny starts by telling the class what they will be
lessons that the boys are	4	doing for the lesson today and then starts an exer-
familiar with.	5	cise she calls 'checking in'. She asks what are the
	6	rules of 'checking in' to re-cap and hands go up.
	7	Basically, the aim of the exercise is to focus the
	8	students on the drama lesson and what they are
	9	going to do today, related to the content. Today's
	10	exercise requires them to individually share with
	11	the class the scariest thing that has happened to
	12	them. Most of the class shares a tale and most of
	13	them are funny on hindsight and the boys laugh at
	14	each other's stories. Those that do not want to share
	15	or can't think of an incident are passed on. Some of
	16	the boys take great delight in sharing and some
	17	even volunteer to tell another tale when the round
	18	is up. I notice that most of them are confident when
	19	sharing, are audible and are coherent and some even
	20	animated.
	21	
Another method Jenny	22	The discipline of the class is quite good. Jenny
uses is "Stop, Look,	23	is firm with them and does not hesitate to point
Listen" to get the boys'	24	out those who are disruptive and warns them. There
attention.	25	are a few students who are 'naughtier' and one boy
	26	in particular always gets warned but other than that,
	27	the rest of the class is pretty attentive and well-
	28	behaved. Jenny's style of discipline is to treat
	29	them as adults first and even calls them Mr. So-and
	30	so and gentlemen. However, when that does not
	31	work, she then warns them like their age - children.
	32	
	33	The second part of the lesson sees Jenny recoun-
	34	ting the lesson the previous week by asking the
	35	boys questions about the story that was told to
	36	them. Through this, the facts of the story are remem-
Students are enthusiastic and	37	bered. The boys willingly put up their hands to ans-
participative.	38	wer her questions and Jenny will choose whom to
	39	answer. The boys have done pieces of written work
	40	the previous week in groups relating to the story -
actually more of a	41	epithets the character in the story saw on a grave-
warning than an	42	stone. Jenny then gave instructions that she
epithet.	43	wanted the boys in their groups to present the scene
	44	whereby the character saw the gravestone and the
	45	epithet on it, and to read out what they had written.
	46	She mentions that they could use freeze frames,
	47	spoken action, repetition, whisper, etc. in their
	48	presentation. The boys were obviously familiar

	1	with these dramatic conventions. Jenny then reads out
	2	the various ephitets which she has kept from the
Visual art and language built	3	week before. They are decorated as well, and I
into the lessons.	4	realise come in rhyming lines of 4. The various groups
	5	then come forward to collect their ephitets to work
	6	on.
	7	
Jenny herself is familiar and	8	Jenny reiterates that they are to present the scene
comfortable with dramatic	9	whereby the character sees the gravestone and the
conventions and language and	10	ephitet and the grave opens. Basically, the
uses it in her classroom.	11	ephitet contains a warning and the character dis-
	12	obeys it, thus opening up the grave. She reminds
	13	them that the atmosphere will be spooky and mys-
	14	terious. She also uses the term ' Forming ' to des-
	15	cribe the exercise and asks them what this term
	16	means. The students say, "getting ready".
	17	
The students are familiar with	18	What follows next is healthy noise in the classroom
group work and most group	19	as the boys discuss among themselves and rehearse
dynamics are ok to good.	20	how they are going to present the scene. Each
	21	group takes a section of the room, with one group
	22	going outside because of the lack of space . They
	23	work in groups of about 4 - 5. All the students are
	24	engaged in this forming exercise and there are some
	25	obvious leaders or directors in some of the groups.
	26	
	27	Jenny then comes to talk to me to let me know
	28	what she's doing and just to make sure I'm following
	29	the class. She mentions that she likes to give the
	30	boys opportunity to 'play' and work together 'coz
	31	she feels they are often behind desks the whole
	32	day in this school. She also does not like to give
	33	comments or interfere in this forming process,
	34	preferring to give her feedback after the presentations
	35	take place. However, she does go round to the
	36	various groups to make sure they are on-track, and
	37	I notice her giving advice to some of the groups or
	38	tips.
	39	
	40	The fourth part of the lesson is the Presenting part
	41	and again Jenny asks the students what the term
	42	presenting' means. They reply, "showing". The
	43	students sit in a group at the front of the classroom
	44	facing the back, thus creating the performance/
Introduction to drama as	45	audience space. Jenny plays music to create the
theatre.	46	atmosphere of the cemetery and says that the
	47	following week she will bring in props for the boys
	48	to use for their presentations. She asks them to

	1	describe the music and what kind of actions and
	2	mood would be appropriate for the presentations.
	3	ex. would their actions be slow or quick? She
Students are used to the idea	4	terms this layering their presentations. Jenny asks
of presenting and like it. They	5	who wants to go first and a few groups want to. So
are generally confident.	6	she has to choose and dictate the order. She tells
	7	them not to clap so as to not break the mood of the
	8	presentations, and reminds them to freeze at the
	9	end of their presentation.
	10	
	11	The students are obviously familiar with this presen-
	12	tation mode and audience mode and more or less
	13	display good audience behaviour, although some
	14	of them talk during the presentations. The boys are
	15	all confident when presenting although the presentations
	16	are of different standards. Some of them are interes-
	17	ting and more creative in the use of props and body
	18	movement. Some of the boys are more expressive
	19	than the rest and more into their character while
	20	others are not totally in role and laugh a bit. Some
	21	students even improvised lines from the ephitet and
	22	one group even had lip-synching! After the presentation,
	23	one boy actually came up to me to ask me whether
	24	I liked his group's act. :)
	25	
Jenny always involves the	26	The next part and last part of the lesson was the de-
students; work as co-artists.	27	brief and what should have been the 'responding'
Although the lesson is teacher-	28	section but the class had run out of time . Jenny told
directed, it is not teacher-	29	them that they would respond to the presentations
focused.	30	next week and she would give her feedback then
	31	too - what worked and what didn't. She then said that
	32	they would re-hearse the scenes and this time with
	33	props. The lesson ended off with Jenny making an
Arts exposure and across	34	announcement that they were going to watch a perf.
disciplines.	35	next Tuesday from QAC - Phat (contemp. Dance)
	36	to which the students got excited. They were
	37	basically reminded of how they should behave, and
	38	that audience participation was possible. They were
	39	also to do a writing exercise based on the performance.
	40	And this was to be assessed for their report card.
	41	
	42	The class was then dismissed for morning tea.
	43	
	44	
	45	
	46	
	47	
	48	

	1	I went to All Saints College with my supervisor
	2	yesterday to observe a Year 11 drama class
	3	conducted by one of my supervisor's former students,
	4	Karen. The class was scheduled for 11.20 am.
	5	
	6	The College is situated in a nice suburban area and is
	7	quite vast. It has lovely big grounds with lots of nature
	8	and space to walk. The College consists of various
	9	building located not too near each other, and are made
	10	of brick and are low-rise. The impression I get of the
	11	students here are they are polite and well-
	12	mannered. They look at you and smile while
	13	walking past and appear friendly too.
	14	There is also a huge chapel which probably
	a	also doubles up as the hall on the school
	b	grounds.
	15	
to find out exactly what	16	The classroom we went to was a drama rehear-
resources and	17	sal room. It seemed that they had a wing of rooms
infrastructure for drama.	18	for this purpose. The room was the size of a
	19	double classroom (S'pore standards) and was
	20	carpeted. It had a CD player, a drawer cabinet
	21	to store materials, and furniture such as a table
	22	and chairs. There were also boards on the wall
	23	to put material up and a white board to write on.
	24	Furthermore, the boards were filled with material
	25	on various theatre productions being staged in
	26	Queensland, and other related drama articles.
	27	The room had been set-up and prepared by Karen
	28	for the lesson.
	29	
teacher has good rapport	30	As we entered the classroom, Karen was there to
with the students and has	31	greet us. She was mingling with students from
a warm and friendly,	32	her previous class who were waiting for the bell.
approachable disposition.	33	The students were informal with her and were
	34	also listening to music from the radio. After being
	35	introduced and while waiting for the next class
	36	to come in, Karen and I had a quick chat. I found
	37	out that she has been teaching for 10 years; 5
what kind of admin. Duties does	38	at this College. She is also the HOD for drama.
she have?	39	She mentioned that she liked this particular
	40	module that we were observing - the Extended
	41	Artist because it employed process drama. She
	42	then mentioned that the class we were observing
	43	was rather small in size - 13, and had few boys
	44	(only 2). She had not seen them for a week

	1	because of exams which were what the students
	2	were coming from. A lot of them have had no
	3	prior experience with drama, with only some having
	4	done drama since Year 8. She also said that
	5	they were a rather homogeneous group and not
	6	one of her best classes. After the lesson Karen also
	7	revealed that a lot of the girls were boarders at
	8	the College too and so actually shared quite a lot
	9	in common. (The College is also a boarding sch.)
	10	
	11	The students for the class starting coming and
	12	Karen met them outside the classroom. One of the
	13	students took Karen's hand to have a closer look at
	14	her ring. As the students assembled, Karen briefed
	15	them on our visit, and what she was going to do
	16	in the lesson. She also told them to take off their shoes,
	17	and that all they needed was a pen.
	18	
Karen is prepared for the	19	Thus began the lesson. Karen started with a relax-
lesson. It is all in her head.		a ation exercise and played folksy music. She
She is confident and clear	20	asked the students to lie down and close their
in her teaching.	21	eyes and then narrated what the students should be
	22	thinking. The lights were turned off for this. From
	23	getting the students to think about themselves
	24	in the real world, Karen then proceeded to get them
	25	to think about the lyrics of the song, and finally
	26	the context of the role-play: the Vietnam War.
	27	The students were often told to think about how
	28	they were feeling too in the belief building process.
	29	The students were familiar with the context
	30	because it was work they had been working on.
	31	As Karen is setting up the context, she also goes
	32	round giving out envelopes with letters inside;
	33	placing them beside the students. As the cont-
	34	ext shifts more and more into role - the Vietnam
	35	War and the students are made to imagine they
	36	are on the battle-field, so too does the music
	37	change to suit the mood.
	38	
	39	At some points the music was a bit too soft and
	40	I wondered if the students at the far end could
	41	actually hear? Also, some of the students were
	42	fidgeting during the exercise. I felt that the
	43	belief building exercise was average. I don't think
	44	the students were fully into role at the end of it.
	45	Was also wondering why no warm-ups were done
	46	before the class, like exercises to get them
	47	focused on drama?

The process drama exercise is based on a text the students are already familiar with.	1	Karen then proceeded to enter into role as an army captain of sorts and told the students who were soldiers to write a letter home to their parents. She then collected the letters and put them in the top cabinet drawer.
	2	
	3	
	4	
	5	
	6	Karen then came out of role and changed the context to a dance between 2 characters in the play-text. Students were paired up and starting dancing. Each pair were to share their thoughts about the particular situation set-up in role as they were tapped by Karen. After each pair had their turn, the context was changed again.
	7	
	8	
	9	
	10	
	11	
	12	
	13	
	14	This time, the context was one of the character's room - Roy. A girl from the class had been selected earlier to be the protagonist in the scene.
	15	
	16	
	17	The rest of the students formed the wall of the room, sitting in a square with an entrance space as the door. Karen briefs 'the wall' on what they need to do. Karen has set this room up before the lesson to have a table, chair and objects belonging to Roy on the table - photo in frame, book with pictures from the war, a locket, etc. The protagonist explores these objects while Karen narrates this to the wall as the protagonist's back is to them.
very detailed organization and planning seen in the set-up.	18	
	19	
	20	
	21	
	22	
	23	
	24	
	25	
	26	
	27	
	28	
	29	
	30	
	31	
	32	
Students are familiar with conventions for process drama.	33	The students were then told to form a conscience alley and the protagonist was made to walk through it. A male student was chosen to be Roy who met the protagonist at the end of the alley. They then did a role play.
	34	
	35	
	36	
	37	
	38	
	39	
Karen's evaluation a strong component.	40	The students were then told to break out of role and sit in a circle to evaluate the lesson with Karen. They evaluated what happened and also their feelings. The students were also drawn back to consider the script/play. Karen explained that she wanted to continue the drama where they left off because she felt that there was a lot of potential for development. However, time again was against them and so they could only evaluate the situation instead of play it out.
	41	
	42	
	43	
	44	
	45	
	46	
Karen called it 'the tyranny of time'.	47	
	48	

	1	From the responses the students gave during
Karen is encouraging and	2	the evaluation, it seemed that they did get
positive.	3	learning opportunities out of the lesson and Karen
	4	seemed pleased with their replies. To end the
	5	lesson on a happier note since the context
	6	explored was depressing, she then asked the
	7	students to say something nice about the person
	8	sitting on their right before dismissing them.
	9	
shows teacher is open to	10	After the lesson, Karen asked whether we needed
feedback; in fact, seeks it	11	to meet with her to clarify anything. We both told
and it also open to	12	her there was no need to. Karen also asked my supervisor
supporting research in the	13	what she thought of the lesson to which she
area, allowing growth and	14	replied very positively. Karen offered me the oppor-
progress.	15	tunity to keep in touch if I needed anything,
	16	something she did at the beginning of the lesson
	17	too. We then thanked her and left.
	18	
	19	
	20	
	21	
	22	
	23	
	24	
	25	
	26	
	27	
	28	
	29	
	30	
	31	
	32	
	33	
	34	
	35	
	36	
	37	
	38	
	39	
	40	
	41	
	42	
	43	
	44	
	45	
	46	
	47	
	48	